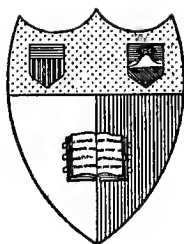




DA  
358  
G28+



**Cornell University Library**  
Ithaca, New York

BOUGHT WITH THE INCOME OF THE  
**FISKE ENDOWMENT FUND**  
THE BEQUEST OF  
**WILLARD FISKE**  
LIBRARIAN OF THE UNIVERSITY 1868-1883  
1905

DATE DUE

APR 28 1948 T R

MAR 17 1952

~~JUN 25 1957 KU~~

INTERLIBRARY LOAN

REF. SEC.

---

INTERLIBRARY LOAN

~~JAN 25 1993~~

Cornell University Library  
DA 358.G28

Letters of Philip Gawdy of West Harling.



3 1924 027 985 260

ohm,ove1



# LETTERS OF PHILIP GAWDY



LETTERS  
OF  
PHILIP GAWDY  
OF  
West Harling, Norfolk, and of London  
TO  
VARIOUS MEMBERS OF HIS FAMILY  
1579—1616

EDITED  
FROM THE ORIGINALS IN THE BRITISH MUSEUM  
*WITH AN INTRODUCTION AND NOTES*  
BY  
ISAAC HERBERT JEAYES  
*Assistant Keeper in the Department of MSS. British Museum*

LONDON  
J. B. NICHOLS AND SONS, PARLIAMENT MANSIONS, VICTORIA ST., S.W.

1906.

W

RF  
FJ  
15/  
12/

A497228

LONDON

J. B. NICHOLS AND SONS, PARLIAMENT MANSIONS  
VICTORIA STREET, S.W.



**Dedicated and Presented**

TO

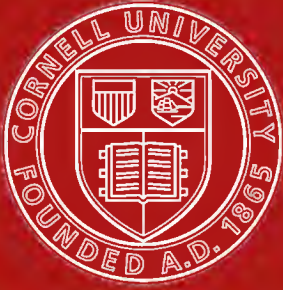
THE PRESIDENT AND MEMBERS

OF

**The Roxburghe Club**

BY

LORD AMHERST OF HACKNEY



Cornell University  
Library

The original of this book is in  
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in  
the United States on the use of the text.

<http://www.archive.org/details/cu31924027985260>

# The Roxburghe Club.

MCMVI.

LORD ALDENHAM,

PRESIDENT.

DUKE OF DEVONSHIRE, K.G.  
DUKE OF PORTLAND, K.G., G.C.V.O.  
DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND, K.G.  
DUKE OF SUTHERLAND, K.G.  
DUKE OF BUCCLEUCH, K.G., K.T.  
DUKE OF ROXBURGHE, K.T., M.V.O.  
MARQUESS OF BATH.  
EARL OF PEMBROKE AND MONTGOMERY, G.C.V.O.  
EARL OF POWIS.  
EARL BEAUCHAMP, K.C.M.G.  
EARL BROWNLOW.  
EARL OF CAWDOR.  
EARL OF ELLESMERE.  
EARL OF CREWE.  
EARL OF PLYMOUTH.  
EARL OF CRAWFORD, K.T.  
EARL OF ROSEBERY, K.G.  
EARL OF CARYSFORT, K.P.  
THE LORD BISHOP OF SALISBURY.  
LORD ZOUCHE.  
LORD AMHERST OF HACKNEY.  
HON. ALBAN GEORGE HENRY GIBBS.  
RIGHT HON. ARTHUR JAMES BALFOUR, M.P.  
SIR WILLIAM REYNELL ANSON, BART., M.P.  
SIR THOMAS BROOKE, BART.  
SIR JOHN EVANS, K.C.B.  
SIR EDWARD MAUNDE THOMPSON, K.C.B.  
CHARLES BUTLER, ESQ.  
INGRAM BYWATER, ESQ.  
GEORGE BRISCOE EYRE, ESQ.  
ALFRED HENRY HUTH, ESQ., *V.P.*  
ANDREW LANG, ESQ.  
CHARLES BRINSLEY MARLAY, ESQ.  
JOHN MURRAY, ESQ., *Treasurer.*  
EDWARD JAMES STANLEY, ESQ.  
HENRY YATES THOMPSON, ESQ.  
REV. EDWARD TINDAL TURNER.  
VICTOR WILLIAM BATES VAN DE WEYER, ESQ.  
WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT, ESQ.



## INTRODUCTION.

---

THE correspondence and papers of the Gawdy family in the possession of the Department of MSS. in the British Museum are contained in eighteen volumes, but unfortunately, owing to the fact that they have been acquired at various times, the volumes are considerably scattered. The first five volumes were purchased in 1866 at the sale of the library of Sir J. Fenn (d. 1794), the owner and editor of the more celebrated Paston letters. They consist of three volumes of letters (1579-1713) and two of household accounts (1582-1639), and are now known as Additional MSS. 27395-27399. The first of these volumes supplies a few letters of Philip Gawdy which are herein printed.

The next acquisition was in 1889. In the introduction to the Calendar of these particular Gawdy papers made by the then owner, Mr. Walter Rye, for the Historical Commissioners (10th Report, Appendix II.) in 1885, he refers to Mr. Daniel Gurney of Runcton as their late owner. They had originally passed from the Gawdy family on the marriage of Ann, only daughter and sole heiress of Sir John Gawdy, 2nd Baronet (who died in 1699), with Oliver Le Neve, of Great Witchingham. On the latter's death in 1711 they came to his brother Peter Le Neve, Norroy King of Arms, and afterwards to "honest Tom Martin" of Palgrave, who had married Peter's widow. When, at Martin's death in 1771, his large collections were dispersed, these particular papers fell into the hands of a London second-hand bookseller, and eventually came into the possession of Mr. Gurney. They are now entitled Egerton MSS. 2713-2722.

In the same introduction Mr. Rye mentions some other Gawdy letters as being in the possession of Mr. G. E. Frere of Roydon, and he expressed regret that he could not include them in his report. Many of them, however, had been previously calendared for the same Commissioners by Mr. A. J. Horwood in 1879, but coming subsequently into the market on the sale of the library of Mr. John Tudor Frere, of Roydon, in 1896, the Museum authorities were again fortunate enough to secure them. They now form the volume Egerton MS. 2804. It is almost entirely composed of the letters of Philip Gawdy, and it is from this volume that most of the letters now printed have been taken.

Even this does not exhaust the tale of the Museum's rapacity, for only two years ago, in 1904, it acquired another batch of the Gawdy correspondence which had belonged to Mr. G. E. Frere. These are now known as Additional MSS. 36989, 36990.

The Gawdy family claimed descent from Sir Brews Gaudi, a French knight, who was taken prisoner by the English in Aquitaine in 1352, and becoming naturalised, married the daughter of William Hamond of Swaffham Bulbeck, co. Cambridge. Here the family lived for a hundred years, and then migrated to Redenhall, near Harleston, in Norfolk, acquiring there the manors of Holebrok and Coldham. In course of time Holebrok manor house was pulled down and a new one built called Gawdy Hall.

The main line of Gawdy from this time was known as Gawdy of Gawdy Hall or of Redenhall. It is not, however, with the main line that we have to deal, but the branch which settled at West Harling, a village about four miles from Thetford.

It was Bassingbourne Gawdy, sen., who acquired the property at Harling through his wife Anne Wotton whose father John Wotton of North Tuddenham had married Elizabeth, the heiress and last representative of the Berdewell family, possessors of the manor since the 11th century. Bassingbourne became Sheriff of Norfolk in 1573, and had two sons, Bassingbourne, born in 1560, and Philip in 1562. By an unfortunate mistake Blomfield has assigned 1569 instead of 1589 as the year of Bassingbourne the First's death, and he was therefore obliged to identify Bassingbourne

the Second with the Sheriff of 1573, in which year he was a lad of 13! These two misstatements have been repeated by other authorities, and caused much confusion.

The existing pedigrees of the Gawdy family, especially of the two generations preceding the first Bassingbourne Gawdy, are so conflicting, and my attempts to reconcile the differences have been so discouraging, that I offer the table at the end of this Introduction without any convincing hope on my own part that I have solved the difficulties with absolute correctness.

One of the additions to the pedigree, namely, that of the second marriage of the elder Bassingbourne, though not suspected by any previous compiler of the Gawdy pedigree, seems to be clearly established. At the end of 1588, about eighteen months after the death of his mother (Anne Wotton), Philip suddenly introduces into his letters references to his "mother" and "sisters," and, fortunately in one case, he mentions his "brother Darcy." With this clue, a closer consideration of certain passages in the letters, and an examination of the Tolleshunt Darcy parish register, it seems quite clear, I think, that Philip's father had contracted a second marriage with Margaret, widow of Thomas Darcy, of Tolleshunt Darcy, and that the "sisters" referred to were the five daughters of his new stepmother. She was a daughter of Eustace Syliard of Flemings in Runwell, co. Essex, a branch of the Syliards or Suliards of Eye and Wethersden, co. Suffolk. The following passage in a letter dated 19 November [1588] now becomes plain. "The marriage day is newly appoynted and not now to fayle, it shall be at M<sup>r</sup> Syliards howse vppon Monday com sennight after the date herof . . . I have morning clothe for my father and my oncle Anthony but neither of them both can be at the funerall for it is at the tyme of the mariag, and the greater Nayle ever dryves out the lesse." The funeral was that of Sir Thomas Gawdy, the judge, who was buried at Redenhall early in December of that year.

Philip Gawdy himself, the writer of the letters, was the second son of the first Bassingbourne Gawdy. Born or rather baptised on 13 July, 1562, he went to London with his only brother Bassing-

bourne II., who was his senior by two years, and they were both admitted to the Inner Temple in November, 1578. They took up their residence at Clifford's Inn, but probably not till the following May, if we may judge from the expressions in a letter of young Bassingbourne dated 22 May, the first letter which we have of his [Add. 36989 f. 1]. Philip's first letter is dated 19 Oct., 1579.

We learn little news from these early letters. Just a word or two of public events and the bare mention of meetings with Norfolk friends in Town. He tells us indeed that he was learning to play the lute, but was dissatisfied with his instrument.

From 1581 to 1587 we have no letters of either brother, and in the interval Bassingbourne had left London and secured a rich wife in the person of Anne, daughter and heiress of Sir Charles Framlingham, of Crows Hall, Debenham, the actual date of his marriage being 17 July, 1586. We may conjecture, by their settling at West Harling, that his mother was in failing health, and for that and other obvious reasons a young and well-dowered daughter-in-law was not an unwelcome addition to the family. The mother was a daughter of John Wotton of Tuddenham, and before marrying Bassingbourne Gawdy, sen., in 1558 had already been twice married. Philip's last letter to his mother is dated 26 May, 1587, shortly before her death, for the entry in the Harling Register gives her burial as 9 June, 1587. It must have delighted her heart to hear in a letter he wrote to her a few months before her death, that her motherly advice for his bodily as well as his spiritual welfare had not been thrown away. "Kirke," writes Philip, "delivered by a means from you, though not directly from your owne mouth, that I shold take heade how to lyve in this daungerous world, and especyally what company I shold keepe. I do assuer yow I do desier to satisfy you thus muche. That I do euery morning use the bricke, and wormewood as a remedy agaynst all pestilence and infection that may happen to the body, and I haue long synce layde vppe your motherly good counsaile that I do euery day meditate vppon as a medicine agaynst all bad company and all other badd actions whatsoever. But I have learned this lesson of late by the advise of them that ar very wel able to instructe, not to



be over familiar with anye, for that may breed jelousye; not to be tyed to any, for that shewes servility; not to depend wholly of any, for he that leaneth with all his force vppon one stake, if that breake, or be vnderminded, his fall must needes be very great with all. But to be courteous to all shewes the true disposition of gentility; to live as not to be upbrayded by good turnes is the highe waye to a happy thowghte, and to stand firmly vppon a true ground, not leaning any wayes is a perfecte marke of a true conscience, which will never fayle when all other vanytyes shall decaye."

For the next two years Philip's letters are divided pretty equally between his father and brother, with an occasional one to his sister-in-law, for whom he expressed a considerable attachment. "I protest to you," he says, "that if I had twenty sisters they all severally cold not drawe that affection from my heart that yowr self doth." Of his law studies we hear nothing; indeed it is probable that they were never very serious. He had by this time made many friends about the Court, and we learn from a letter dated 21 May [1587?] that it was his intention to "ly altogether at the Court." From this time we hear of the usual Court gossip, and especially news of the deeds of Drake, Lord Howard of Effingham, Sir Martin Frobisher, and other heroes of the stirring times of 1588 and following years.

It is evident that Philip had begun to feel dissatisfied with the monotony and inactivity of his life. One chance he had had of going abroad, which, however, he was not allowed to take. This was in June, 1588, when Lady Willoughby, who had offered him "wonderfull great frendshipp and kyndness," was about to join her husband, Lord Willoughby de Eresby, lately appointed successor to Lord Leicester in the command of the English forces in Flanders. She had in a letter expressed a desire to take Philip with her, and Philip, in forwarding it to his father, says, "I will vndertake no iorney without your wonderfull well approving therof and I desire to be satysfyed in that sort that I may remayne in her favor. You may well gesse at the cause that keapes me heare in England, otherwise I should have had greater desire to have sene foreign places."

The cause was, of course, poverty, for it is evident from frequent allusions in his letters that he suffered the usual lot of the younger son of a younger son. Philip constantly contrasts his own position with that of his elder brother, who had been so fortunate as to marry an heiress. He was, however, destined soon to have a startling change and adventure. In the spring of 1591 a fleet of seven ships, under the command of Lord Thomas Howard, left Plymouth with the purpose of intercepting the Spanish ships from the Indies. Reaching the Azores, the little fleet anchored at Flores and for six months awaited the approach of the treasure-laden ships. Philip Gawdy had joined this expedition as a volunteer, and was assigned to the *Revenge*, commanded by the Vice-Admiral, Sir Richard Grenville. The Admiral's ship was the *Defiance*. There are four letters of Philip at this time ; the first is undated, but was written in March on the eve of his leaving London for Plymouth. He is, he says, "hastned a thousand wayes," but he thanks God that he goes "with good credit" and "hopes to winn much honor." The next, dated 3 April from aboard the *Revenge*, probably at Plymouth, does not contain much news, but bears a postscript in the handwriting of Sir Richard Grenville, who bears witness to Philip's spirit and enthusiasm. The third letter, a very long and interesting one, dated 24 April, written from the *Defiance*, whither he had gone in obedience to an order from Lord Thomas, gives a detailed account of their adventures since they set sail from Plymouth. At the time this letter was written they were 30 leagues west of Cape St. Vincent on the way to the Azores. He is again on board the *Revenge* when he writes his next letter on July 6. "We stay," he says, "and pray every day hartely for the Spanish fleetes comming, and yf they come not sodeynly I thank God we ar and shall be suffycyently provided to looke for ther longer comming." The encounter, when it came, was not with the treasure ships but with the more formidable fleet of 55 warships under Alonzo de Bazan sent out to convey them home. On August 31 the English squadron had news of their approach, and considering that a great number of the English were already disabled by illness, there is no doubt that Lord Thomas Howard acted wisely

in giving orders for his ships to put out to sea. The *Revenge* alone, for some reason or other—and the three contemporary chroniclers, Sir Walter Raleigh, Linschoten, and Sir Wm. Monson, all differ on the point—was unable to get away. This is no place to discuss why Grenville elected to stay or describe in any detail the fight which immediately took place. From 3 o'clock in the afternoon till daybreak next day the *Revenge* bore the attack of 15 Spanish warships. Grenville himself was carried below wounded, at midnight. She eventually surrendered, but foundered a few days later with 200 Spanish on board, Grenville dying the next day on board the Spanish Admiral's ship. Among the English prisoners, who numbered only 60, most of whom were severely wounded, was Philip Gawdy.

His next letter is dated six months later, 9 February 1592, and it is written from Lisbon Castle. By this time most of his fellow prisoners who survived had either been ransomed or exchanged, and the delay in his case was the result of an exaggerated idea which his captors had formed of his social standing and importance at home. The governor of Lisbon at this time was Dom Pedro de Toledo, Comte de Fuentes. Philip doubtless knew that prisoners' letters would be read before being despatched, so begins with an adroit, if rather disingenuous reference to the insignificance and poverty of his family. "I knowe not," he tells his brother, "whether yow may safly travell out of yowr howse or howe you have compounded with your creditors," and goes on to ask him to ride or send some one to Lord Thomas Howard to "deale for him." He had been, he continues, made out to be "the sonne of the cheife Judge of London or els of my L. Mayor of London, or els of some other noble howse," while in reality his father was "a poore man of the contry, a yonger brother, and dead two yeares since." He pleads that though he held no office or rank on the ship, and that soldiers were commonly ransomed according to the place they served in, his captors were demanding in exchange for him one "Diogio Daller," a Spanish captain, which he thinks "an unreasonable demande." Philip's artifice seems to have succeeded, for we hear no more of Diogio Daller, but in a letter written in May or June

of the following year (1593) he gives with some prolixity an account of an interview he had with the Privy Council, and it appears that he had been given his freedom in the previous autumn on his entering into a bond and finding a surety that he "undertoke to ransom one Mathias de Frias being in S<sup>r</sup> Walter Raleyes custodye." This would cost him £200, and the Lord Treasurer advised him "that it was farr the better corse to paye the monye and afterwarde to make some suite to her Majesty for recompense." His brother Bassingbourne accordingly advanced the money.

The next family event of any importance was the death, in June, 1594, of Philip's sister-in-law, Anne Gawdy. Her father, Sir Charles Framlingham, outlived her for a few months, and having no other children, young Framlingham Gawdy, the eldest son of Bassingbourne and Anne, became his heir. Philip is still in close attendance at the Court, and we hear of weddings and christenings, naval expeditions and treasons, as well as changes of fashion, in which Philip was much interested, and other more trivial matters. There are no letters between 1594 and 1597. In one letter which I have ascribed to 1597 he first mentions his wife Bidd or Bridget. According to the Heralds' Visitations her maiden name was Strangman of Hadleigh, Essex. She was in all probability daughter of Bartholomew Strangeman of Hadleigh, who had died in 1580. Bridget had had a brother, Robert, who was six years old at his father's death in 1580, and must have died young, as there is no mention of him in these letters. Bridget's mother married in the following year Dudley Fortescue, of Faulkbourne, the date of the marriage, according to the register of that church, being 25 July, 1581. The Strangman property, after the death of her son Robert, was probably willed by her to her husband's family, as we find in Morant's History of Essex and elsewhere, the Fortescues holding Strangman's lands in Hadleigh, etc. At any rate Bridget could have brought none to her husband, who never ceases to complain of his poverty and to compare his lot with that of his more favoured brother. The latter indeed, now a widower, had made another good match by an alliance with Dorothy, daughter of Sir Nicholas Bacon of Redgrave.

Bassingbourne had been Sheriff of Norfolk in 1593-4, and in 1597 he was knighted. He was again Sheriff in 1601-2, and sat for the borough of Thetford in the first Parliament of James I. In a letter of Philip's written just after the Queen's death he writes to his brother: "I pray make suer with S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Bacon that I may be Burgesse of Aye or in your right for Thetford for we shall have a parlament presently and I speake in tyme hoping that you will respect me afore a straunger." Philip had been a Member of Parliament continuously from 1588, when he was returned for Thetford, representing Eye in 1593-7, and in 1597-1601 Thetford again. In the last Parliament of Queen Elizabeth he sat for Sudbury. In this first Parliament of James I., Sir Bassingbourne Gawdy and Sir William Paddy were returned for Thetford, but the official returns for Eye and other Suffolk boroughs are unfortunately missing. As to Eye, all that is known is that in 1610 Sir John Kay was elected *vice* Sir Edward Honing. I am inclined to think that Philip Gawdy did sit in this Parliament either for Eye or some other borough of which the returns are missing, from the following passage in a letter of 3 July, 1604 (*v.* below p. 147): "This night a hundred of the best of *us* of the parlament howse make a great supper at Marchant Taylers Hall," and from passages in other letters (pp. 142, 143). If he sat for Eye he must have retired in favour of Sir Edward Honing at some time between 1603 and 1610.

He has much to say that is interesting, if not new, on the wholesale distribution of offices and honors to needy Scotchmen on the accession of James I, and makes many caustic remarks on the bargaining for similar distinctions by rich Englishmen. "The King hath placed in all offices some Skottes and put out many Englishe, meaning to make us all one under the name of ancient Britons," and then, with the characteristic loyalty of an East Anglian, "I doubte not but that you have heard of the multitude of Knightes made in many places, whereof our country (*sc.* county) hathe tasted pretyly well. In truth it is sayde that many payd well for ther honor, only our countrymen excepted who were pickt out for ther vertues." Of the jests flying about the Court on this

subject he mentions several. Here is one: "two, walking, espyed one a farr of, the one demanded what he shold be, the other answered he seamed to be a gentleman, 'No, I warrant you,' sayes the other, 'I think he is but a knight.'"

The few letters in the present collection of a date subsequent to the death of his brother in 1606 are addressed to his nephew, Framlingham Gawdy. Philip's two last letters to his brother, written in October and November, 1605, had given some account of a visit which Framlingham had made to London. The latter, a lad of seventeen, had apparently become entangled with some undesirable person at Harling named "Mistress Havers," and to break off the connection a journey to town was projected. His uncle Philip took him in hand, showed him "the lyons, and the tombs at Westminster," introduced him at Court, reports to his father that "he is mended in his carriage and behaviour wonderfull muche, and was very well lyked and beloved of many worthy gentlemen," and expresses the opinion that he "will prove a courtier." Framlingham, who it will be remembered was a person of considerable consequence, being not only his father's heir but having also succeeded to the estate of his grandfather, Sir Charles Framlingham, eventually married, in 1608, Lettice, daughter of Sir William Knollys, and their son William was created a baronet in 1663.

The following interesting document (of which a short abstract is given on p. 169) is here given in full as it concerns Philip Gawdy, but I am unable to offer any explanation of it. There is no allusion in the letters to a projected journey to Palestine, and whatever value real or fictitious the document may have, it may be safely assumed that the expedition was not made.

"Be it knowne to all men by theis presents that we Framlingham Gavdy, of West Harling in the County of Norfolk, esquire, and Charles Gavdy of the same, esquire, do aknowledg our selues to owe and be indebtet vnto John Nvnne of Burye S<sup>t</sup> Edmonds, Esquire, the some of threescore powndes of lawfull english money to be payd vnto the sayd John Nvnne his executors, administrators or assignes within twentye dayes after the Returne of Phillipp Gavdye, esquire, from Jerusalem in Pallestyne within the

Countrie of Judea, into the Realme of England and hath lawfully proved, shewed and declared vnto the sayd Framlingham and Charles, their executors or assignes by certificate or testimoniall vnder the seale of the sayd Cytie of Jerusalem or by other sufficient or true prooffes that the sayd Phillipp Gavdy hath bene personally at the sayd citey of Jerusalem, at or in the newe dwelling house of the sayd John Nvnne in Burye abovesayd. For the true and faythfull payment wherof we bynde vs and eyther of vs, our heires, executors and administrators fyrmly by theis presents. In wytnes wherof we have herevnto set our hands and seales the xxi<sup>th</sup> day of October in the yere of our Lord God one thousand sixe hundred and eleven.

FRAMLINGHAM GAVDY

CHARLES GAVDY

Sealed and delivered  
to the use of the above  
named John Nvnne in  
the presence of

HENRY FORTESCUE

ANT. RAILLYN

THO. MURYELL."

Endorsed "My Cosin Framlingham and my Cosin Charles Gavdy their bande, lx<sup>li</sup>."

The publication of this book has been unduly delayed owing to the fact that it was, in the first place, entrusted to the late Mr. F. B. Bickley, Assistant Keeper of the MSS. British Museum, and for many years the beloved and much valued superintendent of the Students' Room there. When Mr. Bickley accepted the work from Lord Amherst he was in fairly robust health, and he had every expectation of being able to complete it, but the illness which attacked him, and, ultimately proved fatal, prevented him from doing more than making a first selection and transcript of the letters, and annotating a part only of them. It was by Mr. Bickley's wish and with his lordship's concurrence that the present editor has finished the preparation of the letters for the press.

I. H. JEAYES.

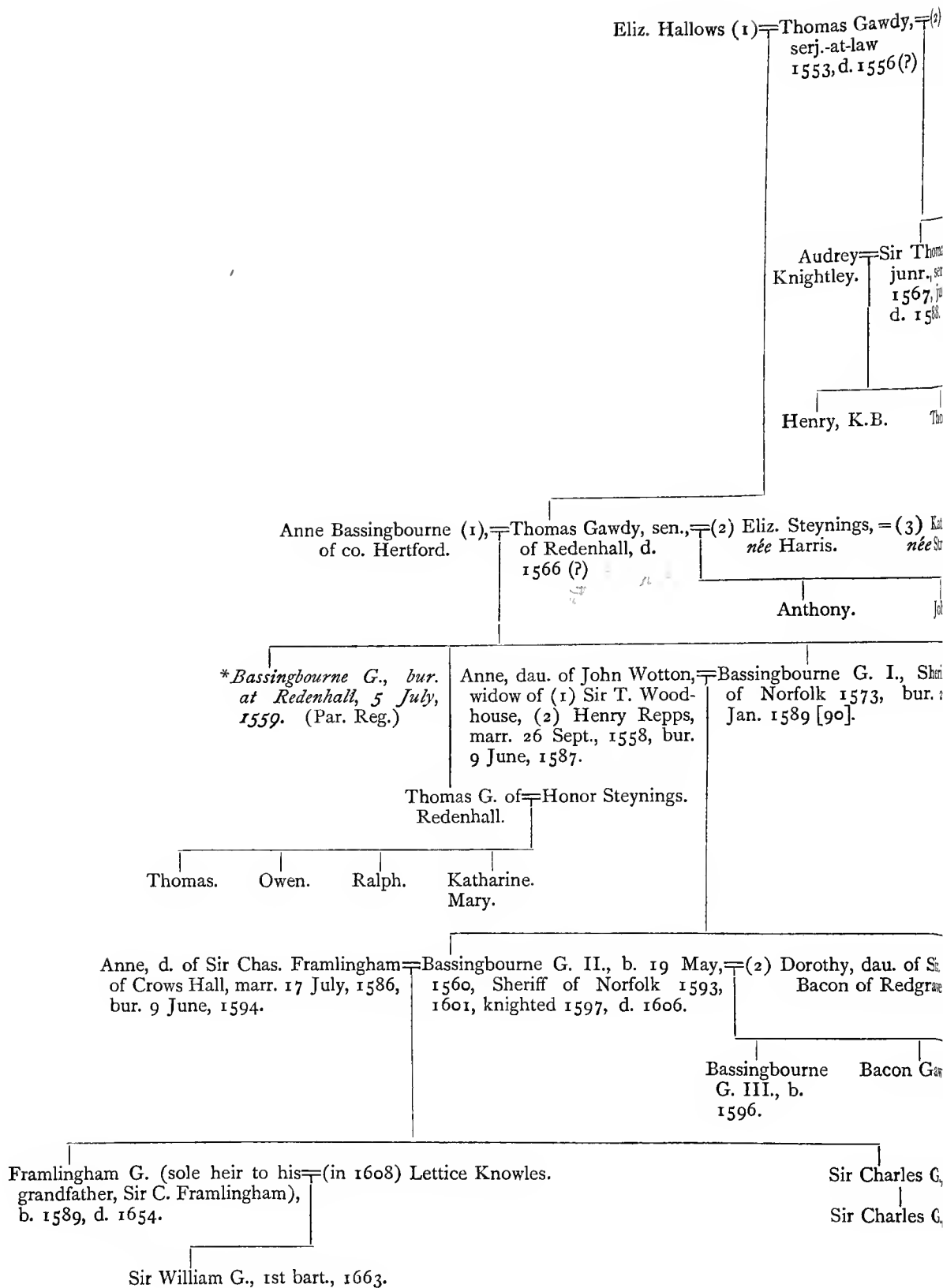
BRITISH MUSEUM,

9 *July*, 1906.









\* Entries in Italics are additions to

(2) Rose Bennet = (3) Eliz. Shires.

Sir Francis Gawdy = (2 June, 1563) Elizabeth Conysby. Katharine.  
b. abt. 1532,  
Judge of Q.B.  
1589, Lord  
Ch. Justice  
1605, d. 1606.

Thomas Gawdy,  
serj.-at-law  
judge 1575,  
1588.

Margaret.

Thomas. George. Isabel.  
Anne.  
Mary.

Katharine Hastings,  
the Strange or Estrange.

John.

Sheriff = (2) \*Margaret Sulyard, wid.  
bur. 25 of Thomas Darcy of Tolles-  
hunt Darcy, marr. in Dec.,  
1588, bur. 15 Aug., 1590.

Katharine = Henry Everard  
of Lynstead.

Bartholomew Strangman, = Maria = (2nd husband) Dudley  
of Hadleigh, co. Ess., Fortescue of Faulkbourn.  
d. 1580.

of Sir. Nich.  
edgrave.

PHILIP GAWDY, b. 13 July, = Bridget Strangman (marr.  
1562, M.P. 1588, etc., bur. about 1597).  
20 May, 1617.

Gawdy. Dorothy.  
Frances.

Francis G., living  
in 1649. Anthony. Bridget. Dorothy. Elizabeth.  
Mary.  
Lettice.

les G., knt. (bur. 1629)  
les G., 1st bart., of Crows Hall, 1661.



## LETTERS OF PHILIP GAWDY.

---

TO HIS FATHER, BASSINGBOURNE GAWDY, SEN.

(Eg. 2804, f. 1.)

MOST LOUING AND GENTLE FFATHER,

Yf I cold to your so great ioye as to myne owne lyking write of any thyng, the only duty that I owe wold worke the care of doing, so oft as by any meanes it might be especyally vppon so good conueighing of my wrytynges as (it hath chaunced) now with great gladnes. And for my doing well whiche I knowe commethe by grace aboue nature that godes blessinges may be your gladnes. In that I beseche you blesse me in praying ffor them. I will not stand to reason the readines and naturall promptnes we fynd in our selues to haue an Inclination to evill. And againe the slaknes and slow passage we make to Loue and delight in the best thynges. My mother her exhortacions and louing persuasions to avoyde the worst and vse the best sortes of company, I trust I shall allwayes haue cause to thynke of for any further profitt. And I pray god that as hetherto I haue bene cause of some of youre great care so by countervalling of the same I may hereafter bryng agayne some cause and hope of youre good lyking in me. I am dryven to shortnes by reason of the vncerteyne haste of the bearer herof but your comming hether so shortly dothe somewhat persuade me that it may sufficyently serue ffor this tyme, w<sup>ch</sup> journey of yours as I do wishe it prosperous so do I wishe it speady and very shortly to come. And thus desyryng your dayly blessinges w<sup>ch</sup> can not to

often be craued I shall pray to god that he may so sufficyently  
blesse you as I may care the better for it. The xix<sup>th</sup> day of October  
Anno Do. 1579

Your obedient Sonne

PHILLIPP GAUDY.

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 3.)

Thoughe the care of our dutyes at all tymes sufficyently  
requires letters to you our parentes, yet this cause of wrytyng is the  
rather furthered by meane of our messinger, whose message shall  
manifest and as it were laye open that hydden good will in some  
measure on my behalff which all Sonnes do owe, and ought to gyve  
to ther fathers. I do not speake to iustefye any, but thus muche I  
presume to desire of your goodnes, that you will (as allwayes you  
have done) favorably dispose of this my meanyng. And bycause I  
thought yow wold looke to heare somewhat of the state of our  
chamber and our placyng in yt, thus muche bothe my brother  
and I can certefy you of that we wer admytted thereonto by  
M<sup>r</sup> Sergeant fflowerdew<sup>1</sup> his meanes before our commyng vpp. But  
our confirmacion for the same we wrought withe the payment of  
our purses. And yet not like to have possession thereof before the  
next terme vntill suche tyme as M<sup>r</sup> Seargeant Halton<sup>2</sup> goeth to his  
chamber at Seargeantes Inne, in whose chamber M<sup>r</sup> Pygott is like  
to succede. Then he loosyng that hys old chamber I hoope shall  
leave vs to gayne it So that vntill suche tyme we ar gladd to  
make muche of our olde lodgyng, wher thoughe we cannot make  
most profytt for our studye, yet we make a profitt by sparyng of

<sup>1</sup> Edward Flowerdew (*ob.* 1586), a member of the Inner Temple. He was made Serjeant and recorder of Great Yarmouth (1580), and in 1584 became third Baron of the Exchequer. As a Norfolk man, being the son of John Flowerdew of Hethersett, the young Gaudys were possibly known to him.

<sup>2</sup> Robert Halton, made Serjeant in 1580.

some expenses, whiche otherwher placed wold have put vs vnto, but this is our advantage to spare an inche of thrift, and wast an ell of profytt, but we yeild to necessity. With besechyng of your blessinges, I thus leave praying that God will contynewe his contynuall lovyng kyndnes by many yeares vppon yow. At Cliffordes Inn the xxvij<sup>th</sup> day of October [1580]

Your lovyng and allwayes obeying Sonne,

PH. GAVDY.

---

TO HIS MOTHER.

(Add. 27395, f. 1.)

I shall not (my most lovyng and deare Mother) be occasioned at thys tyme to trouble you with any report of dyvers and sondrye thynges that have happened wherof I myght advertyse yow, for I thinke the thyngs that necessarily gyve occasion of wrytyng, my brother hathe remembred in his letter. I will therfore but in duty sollicyte you with my letter, but in that thyng I must wholly refer my self to suche acceptance as you will make of my consideration that I haue to be dutyfull. I neade to use any woordes to perswade yowe to thynke well of thys or of that bycause that I haue allwayes presumed thus muche of yowr lovyng kyndnes that nothyng can be more wellcome to yow then to heare of any of our well doing. It thus chaunced that not long since I was in company with M<sup>rs</sup> Garret of the courte where she did enquire by me of yow and glad she was to heare that yow did well, and further she did desire me that the next tyme I shold wryte into the contry that I wold remember her harty commendacions to yow. And so the rather as well to keepe my promyse, as to performe her request I haue heare, so well as I can, conveyed her commendacions to yow. And thus I leave of for this tyme, desiryng yow to remember my humble dutye to my Father, and still cravyng your dayly blessinges and prayers vnto God for

vs ; other ordynary blessinges cannot cum amysse at any tyme when yow shall thynke so good.

From Cliffordes Inn.

Your obedyent sonne,

PHI. GAVDYE.

TO HIS FATHER.

(Add. 27395, f. 3.)

It may be (my good father) that by reason of our somewhat longe sendyng of thes our letters, that eyther we haue bene verye neglygent in inquiryng out of messingers or els that we have deferred the tyme the rather to amplyfie our lettres withe the more newes. But it hathe so chaunced out (I feare me contrary to your expectacion hering) that I am suer none of vs can any otherwyse certyfye yow, but that suche thynges as yow have heard of, stand at the same stage that they wer at before. As for any manner of Parlament newes there is none as yet knowne (at least I meane openly published abroad). I had thought to have put yow in mynd of the H. the vii<sup>th</sup> which my oncle Nunne did promyse me, that it wold please yow to send it upp so soone as yow may conveniently. As for the Lute I will not saye what Lykyng I had of it, bycause no bodye shall hereafter saye that I was somewhat newfangled of the same. But otherwise suerly it is like anoughe I wold have praysed it somewhat more then I meane to do at this tyme. And therfore (As thoughe I had commended it) I wold herin moste humbly desire yow to send upp uppon the buying of it, or at least if yow thynke not so good to keape it to my brothers use and myne till we come into the contrye.

I have heare a lute w<sup>ch</sup> I have bestowed some cost vppon, w<sup>ch</sup> dothe not alltogether ffall out so well as I cold haue wysshed, and therfore if yow cold any waye devise to send vpp the same safe and sounde I shold thynke my self euery kynd of waye much better furnished and prouyded to learne to playe of the lute then I am



now at this present, but your dyscrecion may haue all my devise herin, if yow do not so thynke it good. And in the meane tyme I shall still contynually crave yowr Fatherly blessing joyned with my good mothers helpe herin, earnestly and vnfaynedly desyryng bothe yowr dayly prayers vnto God for his grace, that by that meanes I may styll have your grace, and hereafter have such everlasting grace and Favor, that I may obtayne that lyfe which never shall have end.

ffrom Clyffords Inn the vj<sup>th</sup> day of ffebruarye [1581]

---

TO HIS MOTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 7.)

I did the rather at this tyme (My good Mother) direct my letters to yow by reason of the late remembraunce you had of vs by your good tokens, w<sup>ch</sup> did not only releave our bodyes, but did also increase our store of coyne w<sup>ch</sup> most commonly is so skant w<sup>th</sup> vs, as when soeuer any chanceth to come it must neades be a great pleasure to vs in supplying of y<sup>t</sup> want w<sup>ch</sup> many tymes falleth out to the endes of court. And yet allthoughe I haue only as it wer wrytten my lettres in your name yet I persuaded myself that yow wold keape nothing from hym eyther by shewing or els by reportyng of it whether lyketh yow best. M<sup>r</sup> Past S<sup>r</sup> Edward Cleare's man meatyng me told me that my Father longed to heare from us, and to heare what newes was best to be sent, in which I will so well as can satysfye hym herin. The only newes w<sup>ch</sup> shaddoweth and as it wer darkneth all the rest is of the ffrenche mens commyng ouer,<sup>1</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> allthoughe it be as common with yow, as with vs yet it is not so certeyne there as it is here, which as it is somewhat vncertayne when they shall come first to the court by reason of so many sondry fals reportes yet the last that I heard was

<sup>1</sup> The Embassy to arrange a marriage between Queen Elizabeth and the Duke of Alençon. For an account of this Embassy v. Froude's *History of England*, xi. pp. 172, etc. Martin Hume, *The Courtships of Queen Elizabeth*, 1896, ch. xi.

that they wold be heare as vppon Monday or Tuesday next. S<sup>r</sup> Robert Jermin with bothe the Ladyes willed me to remember their commendacions bothe to my ffather and yow. S<sup>r</sup> Dru Drury desyred me to remember hym in lyke manner to you bothe. I had thought to have entreated you to have desired my ffather to remember his promyse w<sup>ch</sup> he made concernyng playing of the Lute but I thought it somewhat needles, if otherwise greater matters dothe not put it out of his head. And hearin as in the plurall number I wold intreate hym for us bothe by reason of the good inclination, and forward good will w<sup>ch</sup> I haue sene in hym that way, after whom I will make as great speed as may be to ouertake hym or at least if I can to come but a little behynd him. It hathe so fallen out this Lent and euen hetherto that amongst many other I haue bene marvelously trobled with the common dysease of payne of the eyes, w<sup>th</sup> you knowe must neades be some hynderaunce to my study and for w<sup>ch</sup> indead I durst not muche looke of a booke but only tend playing of the lute. I had it first but in one eye and vppon the mendyng of that eye as well as euer it was, the other eye is now become in the same case that the first was but verye muche now thanks be to God amended, and the rather bycause I barred all medycynes, or yet any kind of physicke. Many have bene latly trobled withal but some of the mendyng hand I hoope, and so am I. I know not what els I haue forgotten to wryte, except only to desire your franke Benevolence now at my Cosyn Woolmer his commyng upp. And so remembryng my humble Duty to my good father and yow bothe, craving the contynuance of your blessings, the furtherance of yowr prayers to God for his grace, I leave yow to his keapinge who long maye keape, preserve, and defend vs in this lyfe and afterward maye make choyse of vs for that lyfe whose comfort neuer shall have end.

The vij<sup>th</sup> day of Aprill [1581] ffrom Cliffordes Inn.

Yowr obedyent Sonne

PHILLIPP GAVDY.

---

## TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 9).

It seamed somewhat straunge to vs bothe (my good Father) vppon my cosin Woolmer his reportyng that yow had not receyved those lettres whiche we sent by the cariers and some other thynges with them, that we thought our selves muche iniured by the ill usage of those that shold haue delivered them in due tyme. And yet neverthelesse bycause my cosin Woolmer told vs that yow wold very gladly heare from vs, I for my parte haue heare framed somewhat so muche as the brevyty of the tyme, and the hardnes of my Invention wold aforde me at this present, in which I am suer I shall fullfill yowr commandment, althoughe I doubte whether I shall satysfye yowr expectation herin or no. But thus muche I allwayes assure my self of that yow wer wont to thynke the best of the willyng mynd wer it neuer so weake to performe any thing that it goeth about.

The only newes that we did know of ar comprysed in our last lettres except that I shold tell yow that the frenchemen landed at Douer this last nyght and so commying on as tyme will gyve them leave. And euery gentlemen now laborethe to goe beiond one an other. But I am like to ruffle still in myne old apparrell and make the frenchemen beleve that it is all newe bycause I am suer none of them have sene it before. But if any new chaunce to fall it can not comm amisse. I meane neither but in reasonable order accordyng as yow will with reason proportion the same. Ther restethe nothyng now but only the remembraunce of my humble dutye to my good mother with the adioynyng of bothe your good blessinges to be powred dayly vppon me. Cliffordes Inne y<sup>e</sup> twelfthe of Aprill [1581]

Your Sonne in all obedience

PH. GAVDY.

---

## TO HIS MOTHER.

(Add. 27395, f. 5)

If I shold (most loving and deare Mother) consider and wey the depthe of your loving carefullnes, how often myght I have occasion to be sorry that suche a mother as you ar shold be dryven to regard your sonne his well doing with suche extremyty both of the inward mind carefully occupied, as allso of your bodely health. Therfore trobled with greife of yowrs I see not els to be remedied or eased but only this way, that you may see my mynd addicted to vanquishe all kynde of Vanytyes and earnestly follow after all godly exercises and studies. Therfore I shall desire yow to gyve but that and the lyke that you have gyven before, and doubte not but you ar ready to gyve now and allwayes your blessinge, to pray to God that he may send me his grace, wherby I may be strenghtned to embrace all kynd of vertue and that by yowr prayers he may so blesse me as you may have cause to gyve thanks vnto him for his great mercy and that I may shew forth his glory by reason of his favourable kyndnes extended towards me, and declare my duty to yow which shall be I hoape in the feare of God. Lastly my whole duty confessed with praying that God may worke his good will both in contynnuing your helthe and other thinges that may bring vnto you quietnes in this lyfe, I take my leave.

From Clyffords Inne, the xiiij<sup>th</sup> of Maye

Yours obeying you, and ever obedient Sonne

PHILIPP GAVDY.

---

## TO HIS MOTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 19.)

MY GOOD MOTHER,

I was apoynted (my very good Mother) according to y<sup>e</sup> last promyse, to have written by the carryars at this present, but that the comming of Kirke prevented me, and made me to alter my determinacion, in that the deliury by him might fall out more convenient then by the other. I was sorry in that I heard not from you more then by word of mouthe that all the good howse did very well. The greatest lovers do feede on the leaste favors, and myself am contented with the leaste remembrance of you any waye, thoughe every waye desiring to heare dayly nowe from you. Kirke delivered by a means from you, though not directly from your owne mouthe, that I shold take heade how to lyve in this daungerous world, and especyally what company I shold keepe. I do assuer yow I do desier to satisfy you thus muche. That I do euery morning vse the bricke, and wormewood as a remedy agaynst all pestilence and infection that may happen to the body, and I haue long synce layde vppe your motherly good counsayle, that I do euery daye meditate vppon as a medicine agaynst all bad company all all (*sic*) other badd actions whatsoever. But I have learned this lessen of late by the advise of them that ar very wel able to instructe, not to be ouer familiar with anye, for that may breed jelousye; not to be tyed to any for that shewes servility; not to depend wholly of any, for he that leanethe with all his force vppon one stake, if that breake or be vnderminded, his fall must needes be very great with all. But to be courteous to all shewes the true disposition of gentility: to lyve as not to be vpbrayded by good turnes is the highe waye to a happy thowghte, and to stand firmly vppon a true ground not leaning any wayes is a perfecte marke of a true conscience, which will never fayle when all other vanytyes shall decaye. I praye God gyve me his grace to do the best allthoughe the tyme be nothing so daungerous as yow take it for,

and yet daungerous enough to have muche warning gyven, and neede enough to be very diligently observed.

The newes of the towne or of the courte is not very greate, besides muche vncertenty withall. The newes touching my L. of Burgene<sup>1</sup> was direct a meare fiction, and a devyse by lewde persons allmost in all places in England, for besides his truthe in the cause, he is at home at his owne howse very sicke, and as it is thought very lately deceased. Ther was a great brute all northe wardes that London was burnt and many suche other rumors raysed, but ther is order taken that ther shall be punishement, for any that shall happen the lyke heereafter. Muche vncerteyne newes touching the Queene of Skottes, In that she should have hidd herself in the topp of a chymney, and so by that meanes not being founde that they should have made presently great search for her and then she might haue escaped. It is muche bothe thought and reported that she is executed,<sup>2</sup> but the truthe not directly knowen. Ther was ij or iij traytors taken very latly but it was so lately as I can not tell you what ther names wer, but as it was sayd they did beare the names of gentlemen. Ther wer two taken that wold have burnt my L. of Leycester his howse at London, and his howse at Waynsted.<sup>3</sup> I was with my oncle Seargeant at this present daye, who demanded me when I heard of you, and when I shold send to yow willed me to remember him bothe to yow and my good Father in very kynd manner. I haue my Brother his thinges ready, and thought to have sent them downe by this carryer, but he shall not neede to looke for them by reason that his sadle will not be ready by that tyme. But I praye tell him that he shall have all without fayle the next Thursday. Ther is no faulte any way in me, but only the curyousnes of my oncle Anthony touching his saddle, and in that they must all be sent downe together in one hamper. I do meane to wryte to my Brother the nexte weeke, being resolved that in the meane tyme the letter shall searve joyntly to yow all, considering that yow shall all be eyewittnesses of the same. I

<sup>1</sup> Henry Neville, Baron Abergavenny, died 10 Feb., 1586 [7].

<sup>2</sup> Mary, Queen of Scots, was executed the day this letter was written.

<sup>3</sup> Wanstead, co. Essex.

have bene at the courte since my last writing, and have lyen ther, and am going tomorrowe thether agayne to wayte to do my selfe the best good I maye by any meanes, that I may vse. I desier to be remembered to my good Father as duty and love doth bynd me, to your good self, with the craving of bothe youre good blessings. I wold not be forgotten to my Loving Brother, his loving wyfe and my especyall and only good syster, to my cosin Callthorpe and all that wishe yow well. I pray God to send vs all of his grace to dwell allways with us.

This viij<sup>th</sup> of ffebruary [1587]

Your obedient sonne

PHILIP GAVDY.

---

TO HIS MOTHER.

(Add. 27395, f. 19.)

GOOD MOTHER,

I receyved your letters by my cosin Woolmer his man, and I expected to haue returned you my answer by my Cosin Woolmer him self, But he hathe kepte his bedd this fortnight of the gowte, And had once determined to have sent downe his horses agayne. But his mynd altered and so he sent downe his horses to be kept at Ware for vii. or viii. dayes, in hope of the amendment of his helthe. Yet neuerthelesse his man Debdin comming into the contry, I thought it meeter to send by him then by any els, By whom yow shall receyve iii ounces of Blacke silke which Mrs. Heyward did not buy, by reason she was not home for one hole daye. But a very good frend of myne did helpe me to buy it, and she saythe that it is as good as any can be bought ; if yow myslyke it, if you send me it agayne, ther is not lyke to be any losse. The rest of the thinges yow writt for as sone as I may conveniently gett Mrs. Heyward to buy them I will presently send them downe by the carryars. I have had a hatt long for my brother and know not how to send it untill my

Cosin Woolmer his comming downe. Yow writt to me of the receipte of a letter by Kirke. I wold have bene glad to haue heard whether you have receyved the thinges I sent downe bothe for yowr selfe and my brother. I have sent lettres to you every weeke since my comming vpp, howsoever yow have receyved them. I wold be glad to vnderstand whether yow have receyved my good meaning or no. You seamed to write in your lettres that I shold be more carelesse of dangers then you would haue me to be. He that saythe the water is not deepe wold be lothe to be wette, and thoughe the dangers be nothing so great as yow tooke them for yet I wold be lothe to fall into the leaste of them. The cheife occasion of all myscheif being taken awaye, the danger ceasethe withall. Ther was a great marriage in the towne this weeke. M<sup>r</sup> Barker his sonne of Ipswiche and his wife her daughter, wher many of my Contrymen appeared. Ther was yesterday the gunpowder howse betwixt Grenwich and London blowne vpp by myshappe, and seven or eight men myscarried withall as it was credibly reported, I fynde not any thing else worthe the reporting. You writt somthing about some order for the receipt of mony, when it shall please yow it can not but be wellcome to vs that tast the cold weather, and ar now entring into Lent to do peanaunce. I desire to be remembered to my good father, etc. London this xxiiij<sup>th</sup> of [Febr]uary *s.a.*

---

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 60)

SIR,

Allthoughe I had allwayes remembraunce of spedy dispatching of this bill touching the impost which my L. Treasurer dothe bestowe vppon yow, yet cold I not before this instant either have Mr. Skinner in towne or at leysure to performe my request but in the end he seamed to be as willing to pleasure yow as any. He hathe made the bill for him. And I hoope it will not be dis.



pleasing to yow, by reason of the conveyency of the carriage by water. I have done for the best as near as I cold, and if it may fall out according to your lyking, I can now chose but be wonderfully well contented. I cold not as yet meete with Robin Crispe for if I had I wold have remembred to have demaunded a pleasure of him to do yow service withall. I heard nothing from yow this weeke by the carryars nor from any of your good houshold, I wold be very glad often to heare from yow at your best leysure, and your good pleasure. I have thought yow wold have taken some order before this touching the buying of your lyveryes. Whensoever it shall please yow to commaund I shall be glad to be employed to do yow the best service I may according to my skill in that facultye. And where I fynd my knowledge fayling, I will take advise of them whose experience is greater then myne owne. I wold be sorry that my good Mother, or my good sister shold thinke longe for the receapte of their things they sent for, I have most of them ready, and was disapoynted very vnhappily of some one thing, and I thought it not meete to send, vntill I sent them downe altogether, which shall not be long. And I have restored my letters bothe vnto my Mother, and to my Sister vntill my oncle Anthony his comming downe, which will be written this ii or iii dayes. Love itself will bring him the sooner, and make him ride the faster. I wold be gladd of his well doing in marryage, but gladder of myne ovne w<sup>ch</sup> I referre only to the pleasure of him that directeth all harts that seeke to him in truthe and honesty. My L. of Comberland,<sup>1</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Henry Lee, and S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Gorge did runne at the courte as yesterday the course of the field. A yonge gentleman touard (?) my L. of Leycester called M<sup>r</sup> Goldingam was holden in the streete by M<sup>r</sup> Pinchin and an other vntill one Fox did very sore hurte him, but being at liberty he made them all to traverse ther ground with great expedition. If I shold write to yow of my other newes, that shold be more then I know my selfe. I shall send yow some more very shortly. I desire according to my duty to be remembered to your good self and my good Mother to pray for me that

<sup>1</sup> George Clifford, Earl of Cumberland, 1569-1605.

the aboundance of all good blessinges may light vppon me. Commend me to my good Brother, and his good wyfe as to my dearest Jewelles that I account of.

London this vjth of Aprill *s.a.*

---

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 23.)

Sir, thoughe the occasion of my writing shold fall out muche lesse yet colde I not forbear to put my penn to the paper, considering the meanes that I am offered, by whom you shold take viewe of my letters. The greatest part of the newes that heare is, him self can report the cheife to yow, besides it is not long since my last writing, And ever since my oncle Anthony with my selfe have bene at the court, and after this weeke I meane, after the dyspache of some of your owne and my Brother his busines, to ly altogether at the Courte. I must desire your patience to have leysure to dyspache all your things well, I hope to dyscharge my self of them to your good lyking, and that out of hand. There be many thinges a comming and I thinke it meetest to send them altogether. My oncle Anthony and my selfe ar a parting at this daye without any great store of myrthe. I fynde my self so muche beholding to him, as I thinke cause meete enoughe to account him amongst the number of my very good frendes. I thinke he hathe writt to yow him self.

S<sup>r</sup> William Wallgraue and my L. Windsor had a quarrell, and ended it in the feild together, but no blood drawne. Certeyn Jesuites be taken and committed to the tower. Two lawiers committed to the fleete the last day of the terme for somewhat to lyberall speaches, M<sup>r</sup> Wyat of the inner temple, and Phillippes of the middle temple. Captayne Stinke takethe great payne at many feastes wher he is bidden. I haue bene at some of them thoughe I haue not travelled so farr wettschodd as some others haue done.

I hope this shall suffyse till further tyme may minister further cause of writing. I desire to dwell in your good opinion and euer to

enioye that ffatherly care which I esteame more pretious than all the iewelless in the world. My duty shall never be forgotten to your good self, etc.

This xxj<sup>th</sup> of May [1587?].

---

TO HIS MOTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 25.)

MY VERY GOOD MOTHER,

I can not sorrow to muche to thinke that my long continuance heare sholde conclude with some kynde of dyspleasure bothe of my Father, and your self, as I vnderstood by my last receyved lettres written by my very good Brother. And first to answeere in order according to the forme of my Brother his letter, he seamed to write that my Father was not well content in that he receyved not the lyveries by the last carryars. I may boldly and truly excuse my self on this behalf that ther rested no fault in me concerning the staye of the same clothe. I haue bene allwayes and meane to continue carefull to performe your busines with all shewe of duty, and I hope I haue not omitted any since my last comming (this only excepted). And yet I am out of doubte if yow knewe the circumstance of the cause, you wold vnburthen my sholders of some parte of the blame yow have so heavenly layd vppon me. For his owne men can testifye that I had the clothe ready to be sent and every body likte it so well as myght be, beside himself. But I will neuer be so muche ouerruled by him agayne to gayne my self so muche dyspleasure . . . I am farr vnfitt to wryte any newes, neuerthesse I will make yow partake of some little. Captayne Crosse is com from S<sup>r</sup> ffr. Drake and hathe brought certeyne newes that he hathe sunke and burned xxxiiij<sup>th</sup> shippes of the King of Spayne and hathe foure more laden with muche wealthe<sup>1</sup> I shall praye to God to send me bothe yowr favorable good opinions, and

<sup>1</sup> Sir Francis Drake had been appointed to the command of a strong squadron in the spring of 1587 with orders to harass the Spanish fleet. He arrived off Cadiz on the 19th of April, where he found a Spanish fleet assembled "not yet manned or fully equipped." Sailing in amongst them, he attacked with the result described above.

thas yow will blesse me with your prayers that therby I may follow some fruite of that grace which may neuer departe from me. Commend me to my good Brother, and his good wife. My penne dothe not faynt, but the unablenes of my heaue hart to vndite dothe beginn to fayle me. London, this xxvj<sup>th</sup> of Maye, [1587].

---

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 27).

SIR,

The vncerteenty of your abode at home hathe restrayned the desir I had of a continuall acknowledgment of my affectionate duty by writing : Besides the carryars left travelling a fortnight or Three weeks together, and otherwyse I had not the good happ to meete with any that might be the meanes to conueye some tokens of my vnfayned service. I mett with my Cosin Woolmer at the very hower of his first comming, and he presently acquaynted me with the small staye of his man in the towne, which cold not mucche contente me by reason the small allowance of tyme might abbrige me of some part of that care and consideracion that I ought to have, whensoever I shold vndertake any cause to write to yow. Premeditation wold well become me at all tymes, but especyally when I shold write to him, uppon whom all the hope of my whole lyfe dependeth. In dysabling my self thus for want of brethe I must referr my self to your good and favorable conceytes and desier yow to suppose that yf tyme wer not so niggardly yow shold not fynde the grounde so barren as I feare it will make shewe of by the style. Pollycy allowethe me to take this advauntage which otherwyse I cold not challenge by any pryviledge. And a reasonable excuse suffyseth a reasonable mynd. I have herd of the great paynes and travells yow have had at the coste syde, and I hope I may adioyne some charges therunto. My oncle was the first that told me of your being ther by a man of his, Blake . . . Some certeyne speaches ther is at the courte that yow shall be dyscharged of this watching and warding at the sea coste. Some

thinke the commissioners will be here shortly, and no likelihood of peace, others thinke it impossible we shold have warr. I have sent yow downe some suche thinges as might best be brought by my cosins man. Yo<sup>r</sup> Seale is done and I hope yow will well lyke of it with the creste, and the troth (?) S<sup>r</sup> I have sent yow downe heare a letter from my L[ady] Willoughby,<sup>1</sup> I praye, sir, wronge me not vppon the cause of the writing of the letter, ffor I protest to yow it is the least parte of my desire but I assure you S<sup>r</sup> she hath offered me wonderfull great frendshipp and kyndnes. And what a wonderfull care she hathe bothe of me and my men, that they should not be any charge to me. And she makethe suche great rekonig of my [being with] her, as besides she desirethe not the company [of any] other gentlemen. I talked with my oncle about [it. He] dothe not myslyke it in respect of some k<sup>2</sup> . . . a man might gayne, for without bothe his . . . allowance I wold not willingly undertake to . . . I cold not in modesty directly deny my Lady . . . uppon it to be allwayes at your direction and c[ommand?]. Now S<sup>r</sup> if it may please yow yow may shape [a] reasonable answer to satysfy her, and assure her I shall be wonderfully well contented if I maye lyve to your lyking. Truly S<sup>r</sup> she certeynly meaneth to go, and hath had sw[eet] favors from the Quene for the accomplishment of her iorneye. I will vndertake no iorney without your wonderfull well approving therof and I desire to be satysfied in that sort that I may remayne in her favor. You may well gesse at the cause that keapes me heare in England, otherwyse I should have had greater desire to have sene forayn places. I neade not nor go not about to advyse yow in this but take what corse you shall thinke meetest and best fully to yo<sup>r</sup> own lyking and I shall thinke myself wonderfully well eased of that charge that I desire to vnburthen myself of. . . .

This xiiij<sup>th</sup> of June [1587?] London.

---

<sup>1</sup> Lady Mary Vere, daughter of John, 16th Earl of Oxford, wife of Peregrine Bertie, 10th Lord Willoughby d'Eresby, at this time commander of the English forces in Flanders.

<sup>2</sup> This letter is torn.

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 29.)

SIR,

By reason of the badd weather it was somewhat late before my comming to London, ffor ther fell out ii suche fowle dayes as I was dryven to rest the one of them. And that night I came to London being somewhat weary I sturred not any whitt abroad, so that I have not learned any great newes, neither do I heare of any by one or towe that I enquired of, that I mett by chaunce of myne acquayntance. I have not bene eyther with myne oncle or my cosin Woolner, But I do meane with as [much] speede as I may bothe nowe and continually to wayte of the one, and visite the other. Suche newes as ther is I meane to wryte thoughe it be nothing in effecte, ther is certyne generall speache of the King of Spain's preparation of a great navy, but whither no man knoweth, it is supposed to vs. Sir William F[itzi]williams hathe his patent sealed to go over L. Deput into Ireland with the returne of the other.<sup>1</sup> Ther is a generall mustering and a preparation for powder throughout all England. The Quene laye at my L. Admyrall his howse<sup>2</sup> by Whitehall vppon Wedensday last, and she meaneth to be at White Hall very shortly. I am stayed in the old bayly at a good frends of myne till I be other wyse provided, very well to my lyking. I will write by some or other this weake, when I shall vnderstand of some further newes, or by the carryar at the furthest. And thus for this tyme desiring your good blessing I committ yow to the tuition of the Allmighty.

London this xxvij<sup>th</sup> of October, 1587.

---

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Perrot.

<sup>2</sup> Lord Howard of Effingham, afterwards Earl of Nottingham, who commanded the English fleet against the Spanish Armada.

## TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 31.)

SIR,

I vnderstood of your well doing by Thomas Serieant which was not a little contenting to me, and of the rest of my ffrendes ther remayning with yow. And hetherto not meeting with any that might conveniently convey lettres to yow, I was dryven by extremity to make choyse of theise slowe carryars. And first I thinke it meete to lett yow vnderstand somewhat what I have done touching your owne Business. Vppon my first comming to London, I went to M<sup>r</sup> Byshopp (who hathe bene heartofore of myne acquayntance) and told him, that he might receyve the mony fortwith so that he wold deliver the band. He was very well content therwith, and came to my cosin Woolmer his chamber, wher he receyved the mony and left the band, which I have in keeping and meane to send yow it cancelled by some fitter messenger. The mony was not to be payd vntil the very last of this monethe, neverthelesse we thought it meetest to dispatche it according to your commandement. He hoopethe much of your frendshipp for som other of his debtes concerning myne oncle. Then touching mine owne and my brothers business at the Temple I have compounded w<sup>th</sup> him for us bothe w<sup>th</sup> very great frendshipp of M<sup>r</sup> Treasurer his parte. The whole of the debte came to about v<sup>li</sup> and odd. I have compounded w<sup>th</sup> him for ffowre nobles and yet xiiij. tene shillings of it was for Commons of my brothers. I do dayly wayte of him for whose cause I heare remayne. I find his disposition reasonable well, and kynde, and willing to have my company, and I will not forbear any thing by following him that may do me good. He desired to be remembered to yow, being acquaynted with my wryting to yowe. S<sup>r</sup> Dru Drury charged me not to forgett his very harty commendacions to you, and desires

that you might know his good meaning towards you. For suche things as I am to buy for yow, yow shall hereafter heare of. And (by the grace of God) I will ever be myndfull of your good counsayle, and carefull to performe any thing by yow commaunded, As hooping and earnestly therby desiring to enioye your favorable goodwill. I do meane very shortly to commende some letter to the hands of some others remayning at Harling. I will in the meane tyme be remembred to them all with assured loving commendations, as to my Brother and his good wife, and to my oncle Anthony who is remembred from his M<sup>rs</sup> and to your good self and the rest, she lyeth at her howse in London somewhat sicklye. Newes truly I know none and to coyne any I meane not, but to tell you of the deathe of an old frend of all yo<sup>rs</sup> my Lady frogmorton [Throgmorton.] Edward Cordell is a very heavy man for his wyfe, and durst not go to church for feare of laughing. And so with a remembraunce of your good blessing to be bestowed continually uppon me, I committ yow to the tuition of th' allmighty. This third of November, 1587.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 33.)

GOOD BROTHER,

I camme from the courte very late the last night, neuertheless I sent to the carryars to vnderstand of some letters out of the contrye, but I heard of none. And this very morning I receyved a letter from yow brought to me by M<sup>rs</sup> Haywards man about ten of the clocke, wheruppon I did presently prepare my selfe in some sorte to answeere your lettres with as muche speede as I might possible. And wheras yow writt to me about sending downe my ffathers footclothe, the letter came to me twoe howers after the cartes wer gone by the ordinarnary (*sic*)



coniecture of ther corse. But by the grace of God I will provide it shall be ready to be sent by the next carryars and what els is to be sent with as convenyent speede as I may. And what service my good ffather hathe besides to commaund I will provide my self to be allwayes ready to performe it. If I had not bene deceyved by some promyse that was made me by a Norfolk man, yow had receyved ij or iij lettres together at one tyme, but it shall be but deferred vntill some other good tyme. And I assure yow I can not enforme yow of much Newes at this present. Some speache ther is bothe at the courte and at London that certeyne comyssiones should go over into fflaunders about a peace.<sup>1</sup> These that be nomynated be my L. of Darby,<sup>2</sup> My L. Cobham,<sup>3</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Jeames Craftes [Crofts] and Docter Dale.<sup>4</sup> But whether any suche newes will hold or no it is to me vncerteyne. I have sent yow downe heare by theise carryars ye proclamacions in ther very pryme. Bysides my L. Chancellor<sup>5</sup> vppon Wedensdaye last vsed a speache at the Starr Chamber to all suche gentlemen as either dwell neare vppon the sea, or els have some other charge for what end that proclamation was set forthe. It hathe made a great alteration with divers gentlemen that determyned to make ther abode heare this Christmas, and had their howses heare ready hyred aforehand. I shall desire yow to remember my very humble duty to my very good ffather with a remembrance of his dayly blessing. And yow maye enforme him thus muche from me that my cosen Coote and an other of the Vshers told me at the Courte that they haue asseased him at the Courte according to his request made in his letter. But he that makes the certyficates was not at the Courte neither divers tymes seaking of him I cold fynd him. But he shall have it with as muche speade as may be. In hast I pray let me be remembred to my oncle Anthony, my good sister, my cosin Calthorpe and lastly to your good self. And

<sup>1</sup> The commissioners went over in February, 1588.

<sup>2</sup> Henry Stanley, Earl of Derby, died 1592.

<sup>3</sup> William Brooke, Baron Cobham, died 1596.

<sup>4</sup> Valentine Dale, D.C.L., died 1589.

<sup>5</sup> Sir Christopher Hatton, died 1591.

so I committ yow all, with my self to the pleasure of the Allmightye this xj<sup>th</sup> of November 1587.

Your assured loving Brother,

PHILIP GAVDY.

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 35.)

SIR,

I did not forgett to send to the carryars to vnderstand if I might have had some intelligence from some good body at Harling, but I found the labor lost, and my expectation deceyved: yet the daye before I vnderstood by M<sup>r</sup> Murrell that your wellfare was answerable to my wishe. And I hoope not to be acquaynted with any chaunge therof.

Being at the court vppon Sonday last I sawe the making of ij newe Knightes S<sup>r</sup> Henry Graye, and S<sup>r</sup> Horatio Paliveseno.<sup>1</sup> Her Ma<sup>tie</sup> vppon Monday was wonderfull mery to the greate contentement of all good and true hartes. She was looked for as this night heare at London but her comming is nowe deferred vntill the morning; ther is bothe great preparation for running and allso greate expectation of the same, but how it will fall out you shall heare of heareafter. I have sent yow downe your certyficat from the courte which yow shall fynde to be in the same forme I advertysed yow of before. The Speache of the going of the Ambassadors doth hold likely to prove very ceirtayne, and vppon

<sup>1</sup> Sir Horatio Palavicino came of an Italian family. He acquired a large fortune as a merchant, and by means of his wealth became an important financial agent, lending largely to Queen Elizabeth, Henry of Navarre, and the Netherlands. His extensive commercial relations often enabled him to collect important political intelligence, by which he forestalled the ordinary political sources of information; and he was often employed by the English Government to furnish intelligence from abroad. He died in 1600. See *Dict. Nat. Biog.*, vol. xlviii.

Sondaye laste there was a New Commyssioner apoynted by the Counsell to go with the rest, S<sup>r</sup> Amyas Pawlet. Ther is in the bill for the Shreves of Norff[olk] S<sup>r</sup> Robt. Southwell, M<sup>r</sup> Clement Paston, and M<sup>r</sup> Gressham, it is thought the last nominated will carry it awaye. ffor Suff[olk] ther is S<sup>r</sup> William Walgrave, M<sup>r</sup> Jermy, and M<sup>r</sup> Phillipp Tylney, it is sayd M<sup>r</sup> Jhon Jermin hathe taken a fearme of M<sup>r</sup> Clement Paston. M<sup>r</sup> Jermy takethe great paynes at the courte for surelye lodging may fall out to be badd and Richemond grene is not very fayre, but it is thought that neither ye scaresety of the one nor the foulenes of the other will suffer any man to outbydd him. Well let him have it, he that wynnes gold, let him eate gold, and yet a man may buy gold to deare. Yow shall vnderstande of some accydentall newes heare in this towne thoughe my self no wyttnesse thereof, yet I may be bold to veryfy it for an assured trothe. My L. Admyrall<sup>1</sup> his men and players having a devyse in ther playe to tye one of their fellowes to a poste and so to shoote him to deathe, having borrowed their Callyvers<sup>2</sup> one of the players handes swerved his peece being charged with bullett missed the fellowe he aymed at and killed a chyld, and a woman great with chyld forthwith, and hurt an other man in the head very soore. How they will answeere it I do not study vnlesse their profession were better, but in chrystyanity I am very sorry for the chaunce but God his iudgementes ar not to be sear[ched] nor enquired of at mannes handes. And yet I fynde by this an old proverbe veryfyed ther never comes more hurte then commes of fooling. My Oncle dothe fynde him self reasonably well, whom I do not lett continually to visitt, and meane to be wholly directed by him in any corse that I shall take, notwithstanding what tales soever yow shall otherwise heare. I did twice or thryse meete a silent woman ther called M<sup>rs</sup> Tylney, she was very troublesome to my Oncle, and muche fallen out with one of his men. If she reportethe any newes of trauellers, beleive her not bycause her newes is dire like her self. According to my oncle his commaundment I am to remember his specyall commen-

<sup>1</sup> Lord Howard of Effingham.

<sup>2</sup> Large pistols or blunderbusses.

dacions to your good self vnderstanding very latly of my sending to yow by lettres. I have sent yow downe your footclothe which I had at my Cosin Woolmer his chamber. Much vncerteyne newes touching some troubles out of Spayne, and out of Scotland, and of some hurt done by some Skottes vppon the borders of England. The Skottishe Ambassadour<sup>1</sup> being at the Court vppon Sonday last seemed not to be acquaynted with any such thing but it is thought that the going of our Commissioners will make some good end touching some good honorable peace. My L. of Leycester<sup>2</sup> by a common report is expected for dayly. S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Gorge is very latly gone over into fflanders, but vnknowne vppon what cause.<sup>3</sup> I have a letter in store for my vncke Anthony. I do meane to report somewhat hereafter to him of the running at tilt bycause he being a captayne, it is meete that he shold hear of nothing but of martiall matters. I wold be remembered to him and to my very good brother, etc.

xvj<sup>th</sup> of November 1587.

---

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 37.)

SIR,

I receyved a note from you by my cosin Brampton meeting him by chaunce vppon Wednesdaye at night laste past, when I vnderstood that yow wold have certeyne trees to be sent downe. The tyne was very short to have sent any downe by theise carryars, besides the weather was not apt for the removing of trees the frost falling out to be so great. My skill is small in making choyse of suche thinges neverthesse I will vse all the cunning I have to per-

<sup>1</sup> Archibald Douglas, parson of Glasgow.

<sup>2</sup> Robert Dudley, Lord General in the Low Countries. Queen Elizabeth's favourite died 1588.

<sup>3</sup> "I do most humbly on my knees thank your most excellent Majesty for your gracious licence sent me by Sir Thomas Gorge for my return unto your presence." The Earl of Leicester to the Queen, Flushing, 21 November, 1587. Hatfield MSS.

forme the most dutifull service I maye. My Cosin Bramptyn hathe directed mee to take the advise one that hathe very great good skill, besides some other that I do meane to make acquaynted with the choyse of the best. I do hope to provide and make them ready in good order agaynst next Thursday. I have allready sent yow downe your foote clothe, Bourne S<sup>r</sup> Edward Cleres man had charg of it. I have nowe sent you downe a cocke, ij payre of gloves, ij dosen of poyntes,<sup>1</sup> ij small bookes for a token, the one of them was gyven me that day that they rann at tilt. Divers of them being gyven to most of the lordes, and gentlemen about the Court, and one especially to the Quene. I was commanded w<sup>th</sup> some ij or iij more to wayte vnderneathe the Quene to be employed in messages, wher it pleased her Ma<sup>ty</sup> to vse me more gracyously then I deserved. My oncle told me of it that night comming to him, for ij or iij of his men stood hard by in a standing. He was wonderfully well pleased therewith, w<sup>ch</sup> cold not be displeasing to me to se him any waye contented. It may be you may heare of it by some other, for it was not private. It was ffriday at night before the Quene came to my Lo. Admyralles. Vppon Saterday was the running at the tilt very well performed, thoughe not so full of devises and so riche as I have seene. My L. of Essex<sup>2</sup> and my L. of Cumberland<sup>3</sup> wer the cheife that ranne, M<sup>r</sup> Gresham was well commended for the credit of Norff[olk]. Vppon Saterday at night her Ma<sup>ty</sup> lay at my L. Admiralles, and all Sondaye at his charge. Vppon Mondaye she went to M<sup>r</sup> Seacreatoryes<sup>4</sup> to dinner when in the gallory before her going she knighted M<sup>r</sup> Jhon Pakington.<sup>5</sup> That night she cam to my Lo. Admiralls agayne, and dyned ther vppon Tuesday. Vppon Tuesday at night she came to my L. Chaunclers wher she hathe bene ever since. Her entertaynment hathe bene very great ther bothe for her self and all her trayne, w<sup>ch</sup> a number of vs hathe very well tasted of. It is thought her Ma<sup>ty</sup> will tarry

<sup>1</sup> Tagged laces, formerly used in dress.

<sup>2</sup> Robert Devereux, Elizabeth's favourite, executed 1601.

<sup>3</sup> George Clifford, died 1605.

<sup>4</sup> Sir Francis Walsingham.

<sup>5</sup> John Pakington, member of the Privy Council, and a great favourite of Queen Elizabeth, who nicknamed him "Lusty Pakington" for his athletic achievements.

ther yet this Sevenight and hereafter at Whitehall. I have bene very little from the court all this while, yet once a day I do visit Chauncery lane wher I report to him according to his request suche newes as the court affordethe. Amongst the rest of our talke he knew my writing at this present, and willed me not to forgett his very harty commendacions to your good self. Many reasons dothe leade me to follow him, and the least favor and kyndnes dothe encorage me to do him all manner of service. Ther be no shreifes as yet knowen nor wer not as yesternight at eleven of the clocke at night, and comming home late was the cause that my oncle Anthony Gavdy fayled of a letter. Neither have I as yet found any messinger but the hedgehog, and yet I have heard that the hedgehog overran the hare, and so the carryar may overrun the post. I know not whether stale Newes may offend his eares being so long a drawing towards him. In the meane tyme I wold have him know this, that his Mrs. is at the court and sending him commendacions, with your self and my good Brother and his wyfe. She hathe heard nothing from him she saythe but only touching musters, she dothe not a little marvell at it. I excused him, and layde all the fault in his secretary for thoughte he be suer, yet he is very slow. For suche thinges as my good sister wryteth for she shall receyve them all together with a letter the next tyme. I have written to her before touching Sir Charles, and my Lady, and divers others letters. I know not how they be delivered. Luke Woolmer hathe sent downe all her things by Mrs. Tylney, I will send downe her pipes and the rest as soon as I maye. M<sup>r</sup> Jermy is travelled into a Damaske gowne, and followeth the courte day and night. I have forgott what he called my oncle Anthony in Greeke but I thinke he will harddly prove him shreife in English. I thanke his worshipp I fynde him very kynde to me, and his (*sic*) continually inquisitive of me what I heare of the pricking of the shreifes. He travelled to the sea and lyes alltogether at the ankor, if his kable be suer, he is like to do the better. My Lo. of Leycester is expected for, and some newes cam out of fflaunders very latly yesternight, but vnknownen to any but the best. Some letters hathe bene inter-

cepted of late. The prince of Parma<sup>1</sup> is come to Du[n]kerke but vnknown for what cause, suspected for no good to vs. As yesterday the Quene going into the gallery made an old knight, S<sup>r</sup> Lewes Dyves.<sup>2</sup> And thus with my very humble duty, etc. London this xxiiij<sup>th</sup> of November. [1587.]

---

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 39.)

SIR,

I have not, nor cold not by any meanes gett so good trees to send downe by thes present carryars, as I made account to have had to serve your turne. Besides Mr. Kyream who shold have bene my cheife helper for the choyse was so sicke this weeke, as he was not able to go, and directe me with his Advise therin. Mr. Hughe Hare I cold not fynd at leysure to vse him, according as yow commanded me. I durst not be to bold vppon my self, though I was to see in ii or iii places, and withe the helpe of some others. And they dysliking I had no reason to allowe. . . . The Shreifes be not yet knownen, and some speach that there shold be an alteracion throughout England to have more sufficyent men. And S<sup>r</sup> Drue Drury was nominated for Norfolk. Some newes of landing of certyne Spanyardes in Irland and of winning of a castle wher they shold have taken M<sup>r</sup> Denny<sup>3</sup> a prysoner. But it is very vnlike to be true, and yet reported in most places, and in the best places. There is great preparation for going to the sea, and many Lordes and gentlemen meane to take ther parte therof. The Quene will remove as it is thought this daye, but yet no certeyne ground therof. Other newes I do not for this present

<sup>1</sup> Alexander Farnese, Governor of the Netherlands.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Lewis Dyve, of Bromham, co. Bedford, knighted in 1587.

<sup>3</sup> Probably Edward Denny, gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Queen Elizabeth, one of the Council of Munster, Governor of Kerry and Desmond.

remember. Lastly remembering my humble duty with a continuation of your good favor towards me I committ yow etc. London this first of December 1587.

---

TO HIS SISTER ANNE.<sup>1</sup>

(Eg. 2804, f 41.)

GOOD SISTER.

I will send the letter you sent to my Lady with as much speede as you maye. And I will speake with her my self before my comming into the contrey. You shall receyve all yo<sup>r</sup> thinges though not at this tyme, but only the stuff for the gowne. Fox can not tell in what manner to patterne it, neither needs it, for I can assure yow that bothe the quene, and all the gentlewomen at the courte weare the uery fashion of yo<sup>r</sup> tuff taffata<sup>2</sup> gowne with an open wired sleve and suche a cutt, and it is now the newest fashion. For cappes and french hoodes I fynde no change in the world all whatsoever els you shall vndoubtedly be provided of. Let me hear from you either by the carryars or els by him that bringethe vpp the horses wher you shall keape yo<sup>r</sup> Christmas. Suerly the gentleman that should come w<sup>th</sup> me into the contry I thinke that rather he will not come, then otherwise. I praye if he dothe come let him fynde that vsage that he will deserve. And I no whitt doubt of it. Sweet Sister send me some newes out of the contry, And I will thinke my self beholding to yow. Let my good Brother assuer him self that I am as myndefull to do him service as any lyving neither will I forgett him in any thing I may. And thus will I leave any further to troble yow. From my lodging in Strond, this viij<sup>th</sup> of december [1587].

By your loving Brother

PHILIP GAVDY.

---

<sup>1</sup> Anne [Framlingham], wife of his brother Bassingbourne.

<sup>2</sup> A taffaty tufted or left with a nap on it like velvet. Halliwell's *Archaic Dict.*



## TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 42.)

SIR,

I receyved a letter by the carryars from my Sister, when I understood that I shold send certeyne word downe for my horses. I receyved the mony yow sent vpp, the Somm of 5*l*. Suerly, Sir, I have had great occasion to vse mony, w<sup>th</sup> hathe made me vse my credit. And I hope you will not dyslike of my dealing therin, for I have sufficyent to show and the parties be very sufficyent. And he that was offered suche a bargayne shold be to blame to refuse it. It can not be to late for any man to vse the benefitt of y<sup>e</sup> tyme. You shall bothe see and vnderstand more at my comming downe. In the meane tyme I will acquaynt you w<sup>th</sup> some newes touching the court. I am assured it is not vnknownen to you of the choyse of the shreifes. They wer prickt at my L. Chauncelers vppon Sondag about ffyve of the clocke, vntil w<sup>th</sup> tyme M<sup>r</sup> Jermy<sup>1</sup> and to the very howre was accourtyer, and inmediately vppon it he vanyshed awaye lyke one that had a blew cote w<sup>th</sup>out a consyance. ffor he fayled of a certeyne knyghhood that he expected, and they sayd was promysed. I have not knowen a greater man shreif of Norffolk then now is.<sup>2</sup> The Quene was determyned to have gone to Richemond vppon Tuesday last in the afternone. All thinges wer prepared, and at dinner tyme she altered her mynd to go to Somersett howse whether she went the next morning, and wher she meanethe to remayne some reasonable tyme, at least all this Christmas. The howshold commeth to Sommersett howse as this very night. Ther is still great preparation touching the going to sea of which I will sett you downe a few of the cheif. My L. Admyrall, my L. Henry Seymor,<sup>3</sup> my L. Thomas Howard,<sup>4</sup> my L. Sheifeild,<sup>5</sup> S<sup>r</sup> ffraunces

<sup>1</sup> Francis Jermy was pricked as Sheriff for co. Suffolk.

<sup>2</sup> Clement Paston.

<sup>3</sup> Son of the Duke of Somerset, commanded the "Triumph."

<sup>4</sup> Son of the Duke of Norfolk, Baron Howard of Walden (1597), and Earl of Suffolk (1603), commanded the "Ark Royal."

<sup>5</sup> Edmund, Baron Sheffield, created Earl of Mulgrave (1626), commanded the "Victory."

Drake,<sup>1</sup> and S<sup>r</sup> Robert Southwell,<sup>2</sup> with divers others Captayns and gentlemen. Ther be certeyne rumors touching the comming of the Spanyardes but nothing of creditt. S<sup>r</sup> I was so dysapoynted by him that I have bought the trees of, as I was with him yesterday in the afternone, and I cold not meete with him at home, nor have the trees delivered, he is so sent for, and so much sought for; for ther is none els that hathe any. Agaynst the next tyme I will be suer to provide them to send downe with some fewe things of myne owne. I will have a great care of them. Now S<sup>r</sup> touching the apoyntment for the horses I wold have them to be heare vppon Mondaye come sennight at night, and by the grace of God I will be ready to come out of the towne Immediatly. I pray let them be heare either vppon Sonday at night or Monday at night w<sup>ch</sup> will be the xviij<sup>th</sup>ene or the xvij<sup>th</sup>ene daye of the monthe. Let him come with his horses to the bell in Smythfeild, and ther he shall be assured to heare of me. I do thinke ther will a very honest gentlemen come into the contry with me to staye ther a fortnight, or some suche tyme. He shall not be any great charge to any for his retynewe. And yet I am not very certeyne therof. And thus with my very humble duty, etc.

this viij<sup>th</sup> of December [1587].

---

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 45.)

SIR,

I knowe not whether the carryar hathe performed his dutye or no, In that I heard not from any of yowr howse. And yet I thought it not amysse to send to them, thoughe I found the labor lost. And having not any Inkling at all by hearing from yow, yet I remayne still to dyscharge the duty of an obedient sonne, as neare as God shall gyve me grace: though I account this the least of a thousand, that my mynd desirethe to performe. And thoughe

<sup>1</sup> Commanded the "Revenge."

<sup>2</sup> Commanded the "Elizabeth."

the materyall cause prove not allwayse worthe the reading, yet the noveltye ioyned with some change of newes may be pleasing to a kynde conceyte. And suerly S<sup>r</sup> immediatly after the acknowledgment of that love and dutye wherin I am continuallye indebted to yow in I can not frame my self to be more plausable to them that remayne in the contrye then by describing and dyscorsing of suche accydents as happen after the ordinary corse of this chaunging world. I shold bring eggs affter apples to tell yow my L of Leyster his being at the court, and yet peradventure yow know nothe y<sup>e</sup> ceirteyne tyme of his first arryvall there. He came vppon ffryday last to Margettes, and the sonday following camme to the courte that night before his landing any wher els. Ther cam with him to the courte my L. Audley<sup>1</sup> and S<sup>r</sup> Tho. Shyrley<sup>2</sup> besydes one grand prysoner w<sup>ch</sup> they make account of. He is a burgonion, and his ransome is not meanelly prysed. My L. Willougheby<sup>3</sup> is left cheyfe gouernor in the Lowe contrys. My L. of Leycester before his comming over made vj knightes by name S<sup>r</sup> Tho. West, S<sup>r</sup> Tho Morgan, S<sup>r</sup> Charles Blunt, S<sup>r</sup> Hughe Chomeley, S<sup>r</sup> Edward Winkefeild, and S<sup>r</sup> ffrances Knolles. And this is the most that I can write touching any thing out of the lowe contries. It is thought the Q. Ma<sup>tie</sup> will remove towards Richimond vppon Thursday next thoughe ther remayneth no certenty therof. S<sup>r</sup> I cold not vnderstand nowe of any certeyne time of receyving of the horses but I will provide myself to be allwayes readye still to thinke, devise and put in practyse how I may do you any service. I will not overcharge yow with writing at this present bycause I have resolved somewhat for a letter threatned towards my [uncle] Anthony, etc. This xiiij<sup>th</sup> of December 1587.

---

<sup>1</sup> George Tuchet, Baron Audley, created Earl of Castlehaven 1617, died same year.

<sup>2</sup> Sir T. Shirley, sen., of Wiston, knighted in 1573, accompanied Leicester to the Low Countries in 1585-6, and was (1 February, 1587) appointed Treasurer-at-War to the army there. His son Thomas, who was with him, was not knighted till 1589.

<sup>3</sup> Peregrine Bertie, Baron Willoughby of Eresby, who had distinguished himself at the siege of Zutphen, died 1601.

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 44.)

SIR,

The tyme shall not be long (by the grace of God) that I do meane to wayte of yow my self. And yet I cold not chose in the meane tyme but somewhat to shewe the desire I have of a true perfourmance of my vnfayned duty. Thomas was very desirous that I shold wryte some fewe lynes. For he doubted you wold examine him of suche newes, as he can not conceyve, nor well vtter. Ffor myne owne parte I am very carefull of yowr owne busines, and most of yowr trees, which shall not be taken out of the ground before the present tuesdaye. I hope you shall receyve very daynty plommes and suche as I wold be glad shold prove well for myne owne creditt, you shall have them written about. Vppon Fryday let them be sent for to Thetford, and set with as muche convenient speede as may reasonably fall out. Suerly Sir, I have the charge of many thinges layde vppon me to provide now presently to bring downe with me, And (by the grace of God) ther shall not remayne any faulte in my travell. Touching my comming home I will come with as much speede as convenyently I may. And I hope to wayte of yow in sufficyent tyme to dyscharge my dutye. I do not meane to leave any thiug that either yow, my sister, my Brother, or my oncle Anthony hathe vsed my knowledge in buying. I haue provided a certayne thing my Sister sent for. And it shall be very safely brought, thoughe the tyme fell out but short for suche a peece of busines. But the more hardlyer a man may do pleasure vnto his frend, the greater is contentment of him that dothe accomplishe it. The L. and captaynes toke ther leave vppon Sondag at night<sup>1</sup> at prayers time, and some as this daye and some tomorrow, and some with as much speede as they maye will take ther voyage towards the sea. Ther wer divers had many men in a lyvery very well apoynted vppon Sondag at the court to be sene of the Quene at ther going to the Savoye to Churche. I know not what els to

<sup>1</sup> The Commissions were dated December 22.

be written of, I thinke yow know of Mr. Rafe Lane his comming into Norfolk and Suffolk. And so with a very humble remembrance of my dutye, &c.

Dec. 1587].

---

TO HIS SISTER, MRS ANNE GAWDY.

(Eg. 2804, f. 46.)

SISTER,

I have remembred yow with as muche speede as I might possibly. Yo<sup>r</sup> peece of Damaske I have sent yow downe to allow of. The Dyer will warrant ther shall be no better out of the shopp. I have sent yow downe ij thousand pipes. I have sent yow downe iij hundred of y<sup>t</sup> sorte yow writt for. I have sent yow vj thousand of that sorte yow writt for in the first bill. I have sent yow yo<sup>r</sup> peece of satten. I have sent yow gold thread. I have sent yo<sup>r</sup> husband ij payre of gloves, and yow one payr. All theise things yow shall receyve by my Cosin Woolmer. For the rest of yo<sup>r</sup> thinges I will not forgett, and for the patterning of the stuff Fox can gyve no ther answer but that he will go as neere as he can. I thinke your Damaske will prove wondrous well. Sister if ever yow will devise to have me to be allwayes your faythfull servant, let me receyve this next Thursday that somme yow wote of. If [you] will take order to do it and send, I am more and more if it be possible yours. Truly I do buyld vppon it, and that yow will not fayle me what shift soeuer yow make.

[Refers to the horses to be sent for him to the Bell at Smithfield which he does not look for "till vppon Christmas," expresses his willingness to execute his business commissions, and sends the usual commendations.]

[Dec. 1587.]

---

## TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 48.)

He has sent all the thinges ordered except some gloves. He continues :—

The Commissioners ar gone and vppon going into flanders wher they shall meete with other commissioners at Ostend.<sup>1</sup> I laye ij nights at the courte, wher I heard of little news. Vppon Sunday last my L Mayor<sup>2</sup> made his wife a lady, wher I heard a very excellent good oration from my L Chauncler<sup>3</sup> to the Mayor and his brethren. I do meane to speake with Mr. Skinner, and Robin Crispe bothe if I can before my comming downe. And thus hasted by reason of the tyme by providing and staying for some things I was driven to be shorter then otherwyse I meant . . . committing you all to the tuition of th'Allmyghty this ix<sup>th</sup> of ffebruary [1588].

## TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 50.)

SIR,

The tyme of my abode heare at London hathe bene so small as had I not promysed both to wryte, and to send yow some necessary thinges which ar presently to be vsed the occasion els of my writing for this present might well have been spared, but the earnest desire I allwayes fynde in my selfe to do yow service, will not suffer me to neglecte the leaste part of my dutye. I have according to yo<sup>r</sup> command sent yow downe a payre of blacke stockins exchanged for yo<sup>r</sup> other, but the other payer I cold not fynd answerable to my lykinge thoughe it shall not be long before you shall heare of them. I have sent you downe viij yardes

<sup>1</sup> *v.* letter dated 11 November, 1587, as to the appointment of the Commissioners.

<sup>2</sup> Sir George Bond, Lord Mayor of London.

<sup>3</sup> Sir Christopher Hatton, died 1591.

of clocklyne<sup>1</sup> the best and the fittest I might well fynde out. I have sent my sister white taffata. You shall fynde them all sowed vpp together besides an other thing w<sup>ch</sup> I promysed my sister she should receyve of the carryar. I am for this present to desier them all to hold me excused for this tyme though they receyve no letters from me for I am yet scant setled in my chamber, besides the place affords as yet no handsomnes to drawe me to be muche in love with long wryting.

I am dealing in the lawe with M<sup>rs</sup> Wentworth and am warranted bothe by my oncle, and fyve or six councellors more that I shall take no harme. I have taken order that she shall not sue me; she vsed me very badly when I was to speake with her at my comming vpp, though since she hathe made some meanes to compounde with me, and wold put it in arbitrement, for she is now lothe to go to the lawe, bycause she saythe she shall not fynde it so good cheape, as I shall. But I am directed by my counsaile that she shall not take any advantage of me, and therfore I stand vppon the lawe with her. I fynd my counsaile very good cheape, and very willyng to do me pleasure, for I have halfe a dosen counsellors besides my oncle, and when tyme shall come, he will not fayle but to speake him self in the cause. I am a little eased of my burthen since I vnderstood the cause to stand so, and I thinke I shall wade the lawe better cheape then she will and so she now thinkes. I thought it meete so to acquaynt you with my proceeding in this cause as one vppon whom not only this cause, but all the actions of my lyfe do depend vppon to be governed by. The Quene was at Waynstead<sup>2</sup> vppon Tuesday and laye ther that night, for myne owne part I can reporte no newes from the courte but of hearsaye. The next tyme you shall heare somewhat of myne owne knowledge from thens, for I am mynded out of hand to repayre thether with as muche speede convenyent as I maye. Ther is dyvers speeches in the towne: some speake of warre,

<sup>1</sup> According to Halliwell (*Archaic Dictionary*) clock was a kind of ornamental work worn on various parts of the dress, now applied exclusively to that on each side of a stocking.

<sup>2</sup> The Earl of Leicester's house at Wanstead.

some of pease, but moste of the fyrst. My L. Admirall and S<sup>r</sup> ffraunces Drake ar commanded presently to sea with great preparation, and ther is nyne skore sayle made ready to go with them. If any newes<sup>els</sup> there be either I have not heard of it, or els it hathe escaped my memory. Some vncertayne speaches touching the poysoning of thre or fower great Kingges and princes of late. Let <sup>uncle</sup> Anthony know that I have bene with his mystres and delyvered his lettres, she was in bed though I think not muche sicke, she lookes for him with as much convenyent speede as might be, for she meaneth (as she told me) to have none els with her. I am to desire you that this rude scribled letter maye suffyse for this present, with a remembrance of my duty to your good self, and my very harty commendacions to them all though nameles. The paper gyves me skant leave, praying to God that we maye never fynde of his grace to be wanting amongst vs. London this ix<sup>th</sup> of maye [1588].

You may directe any thing to me to my lodging the next howse in fleat streat to the hanging sword at Danyelles a tayler.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 52.)

SWEETE BROTHER,

I am not a little greved yow shold thinke I wold ever leave to forgett him, that is the greatest comforte I have in the world. If yow did know the badd meanes I have had of sending, yow wold be readiest to make my excuse yourself. But Sweete Brother suffise yourself with this, that my thoughts ar continually occupied about yow, or any thing that yow shall ever wishe lovingly for me to do. I have not foreslowed your busines in any thing in generall. I have sent yow downe sockes and bands, I have sent my sister her rolle and sylver buttons. I have sent



my father a payre of stockins. . . . Your wyfe shall be acquaynted with your letter, and therfor both together I will acquaynte with some straunge newes not only to me but to all the world that heareth of it. My Lady Framlingam<sup>1</sup> saythe she is with chylde. About a fortnight since I was with her and then I neither sawe nor thought of any suche thinge. And about a Two dayes since I sawe her, and she hathe layde out her belly as yf she wer within ten weekes of her teeming. Many speake brodly of it, and thinke it to be a great mockery and that it is not the first tyme she hathe gone aboute this. She is continually with my Lady Browne, and suche wonderfull frendshipp and practises betwene them, as you wold hardly beleve. I will not tell yow that they vysett mother Davy, But I assure yow my Lady hathe gayned her self no creditt by keaping the others company. My L. Fram. herself will not so muche as speake one word to me of it, and I promyse yow I am ashamed to aske her any suche things considering how drye her handes be. If it come of God, and throughe honest meanes, It must needs do well, but yf other wyse I make no doubt, but [we shall] se the fall, and ruine of ther devyses. It is thought generally that for all this she is not with chylde but some practyse. He that knows the secretts of all hartes will dysclose all. I doe thinke to go thether to morrowe, and yow shall very shortly vnderstand the depthe of my knowledge. And for this small warning I thinke this to be sufficyent. Sweet Brother, love me, and commend me to your self in the kyndest manner. Commend me to my wonderfull well-beloved Syster, returne my commendacions to my Cosin Callthorpe, Seriant Maior. Let Judithe know that I do remember her to further my shirt. I hope my sister will have a care of it, and my cosin Arnold hathe promysed me not to be idle.

*Postscript.*—Brother I forgott to wryte to yow of the deathe of

<sup>1</sup> This was an important matter to B. Gawdy, whose wife was only daughter and heir of her father, Sir Charles Framlingham. The latter had lately married a second wife, Elizabeth Barnardiston, and the fears of the Gawdys were well expressed by a phrase in another letter: "What if my Lady commethe forth with a boye." As a matter of fact no child was born of this marriage

a great lady vppon thursday last in the fornone. My L. of Oxforde<sup>1</sup> dyed at the court, and is interred at Westminster. Ther is a great funerall a preparing and I neade not to wryte to you of the heauy-nes and morning of many of her best frends. Good Brother, tell my sister she dothe forgett me, she knowethe my mynde. London xiiij<sup>th</sup> of June [1588.]

---

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 54.)

SIR,

Comming this morning to this knight to take my leave of him, and promysing so presently to enioye the benyfit of your good company, my fault had bene great, if at any tyme I shold desyst to mayntayne that affectionate duty not newly vowed, especyally considering how muche this knight wold grace these my letters thoughe they wer clere owt of countenance. I thinke he may tell yow that I have bene somewhat tyed to his company as well heare, as at the courte, And if either I shold take vppon me to write some newes from the courte, or this towne I shold but derogate from him the good meanes that he hathe to dyscourse the occurans at the courte or els where. I have not founde him muche malincholy neither have I started muche from him in his best and meryest humors.

S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Leyton hath bene of late in ffraunce, and sodeynly returned.<sup>2</sup> I talked with him myself, and vnderstood the manner of his being there, and the tyme of his tarryance. The Kinge cam to Rone [Rouen] at that very instant with ffourtene hundred horse,

<sup>1</sup> Anne, 1st wife of Edward Earl of Oxford, daughter of William Cecil, 1st Baron Burghley, and sister of the 1st Earl of Exeter and the 1st Earl of Salisbury. She died at the Court at Greenwich on the 6th, and was buried with great state at Westminster Abbey the 25th of June.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Thomas Leighton, Governor of Guernsey, was sent by the Queen on a mission to Henry III. of France whom he met at Rouen. On behalf of the Queen Sir Thomas offered Henry the forces which by the terms of the alliance between England and France Elizabeth was pledged to furnish.

and ffyve thousand shott. No lyklyhood but that we are like to have warres as well with ffraunce as Spayne, and ioyntly together. It is expected ther shold be open warres proclaimed vppon the conning house of the comyssioners, w<sup>ch</sup> is now somewhat freshe in speache, and ther returne very shortly expected. Assure yourself, Sir, I lyve wholly at your direction, and commandment and in the acknowledging therof, I can not fynd a better occasion to conclude my letters, desireing your fatherly care may allwayes so extende so towardes me as I may ever fynd my wished comforte therein. I must needs be remembered to my good Brother, and his wyfe, to Lyftenant Callthope and the rest of our frends. I hope S<sup>r</sup> you will allow me a captenshipp if you have so hye a place, as I was enformed of at the courte. The Lady Willouby<sup>1</sup> makes a greate rekoning of my company but without your allowance the bill is not to be signed. You may determyne of me to your lyking and so I will ever rest. From London xviiij of June [1588].

By your obedient sonne

PHILIP GAVDY.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 56.)

SWEET BROTHER,

I am sorrye yow shold vse so bitter a stile of writing to him, that hathe ever harbored so sweete thowghts in his brests bothe of yow and all yowr procedings. Sweet Brother, Satsfyfe your self with this, that yow can not justly laye any cause of vnkyndnes to his charge, that hathe ever holden yow so dearly, neither hathe not fforgettfullnes seased vppon me to performe any of your requests. And first to answeere you touching the straunge newes of my L. Framlingham. I assure yow tenn dayes before my writing to

<sup>1</sup> The Lady Willoughby referred to in these letters was probably Lady Mary Vere, daughter of John, 16th Earl of Oxford, and wife of Peregrine Bertie, 10th Baron Willoughby of Eresby. The latter was commander-in-chief in the Low Countries at this time, and died in 1601.

yow therof I neither thought of it or heard thereof. And truly for myne owne parte I love not to be the author of ill newes. I have bene with her and fynde her belly somewhat greate, she offereth me no speache therof. But the L. her companyon, and Mrs. Tyrrell speake pryvatly to me in this manner, What if my L. commethe forthe with a boye. Nowe of late within this ii or iij dayes Mr. Brooke was with her by whom I had greate intelligence, and imparted great secrett speeches to me he had with her. And though ther be some vnkyndnes betwixt S<sup>r</sup> Charles and him, And though he seameth to love and wishe the L. very well, and secretly entred into some speeches withe her, what talke the world had touching her being with chylde. The L. protested and sware there was no suche thing, and was very angry that any shold gyve out any suche speeches . . . And if yow will any waye allowe of M<sup>r</sup> Brooks knowledge and opinion, he durst lay a hundred pounds to xij*d*. that she is not with chylde. There is none in this towne either of judgement or reason that can any waye beleve any suche reports. And ther be many women of late have bene with chylde, that have bespoken ther nurse and mydwyves and *Nascetur ridiculus mus*. My L. WyndSOR hath bene with chylde this fyfftye weekes and now they say she is not with chylde. But if yow will allowe me any iudgment in this cause, yow neade not any whitt to doubte therof. For synce I have better looked in to the cause, and enquired therof, I fynde both my self and many others of a farr contrary opinion, then I was of at first. Sweet Brother, touching the rest of your busines, and my Fathers, By the grace of God yow shall receyve all together the next weeke, and make a sure account therof. I have the most of the things ready, but yow ar come vppon me with new busines, which makes me defer all to one carriar. And, sweete Brother touching the opinion that bothe yow and the rest of my frendes have of my iorney into fflaunders, thinke that it is the most pleasing newes yow cold have writt to me; her<sup>1</sup> iorney was sodenly determyned of, and she made a sodeyne request to me to enioye my company. And a flatt denyall to a lady, yow that have lyved in the courte may well knowe, cannot be lymyed within the course of

<sup>1</sup> Lady Willoughby.

good manners. But I protest bothe the begining of the iorneye, and the writing of the letter was more straing to me then the newes of my L. fframlingam was to you. But brother I am the best pleased with this message yow writt to me that any man can possibly be. And thinke not sweet brother, but that I esteame of my creditt as muche as any man lyving, and did consyder and wey of the cause more deeply then you are aware of. And thinke not that I had any determind will either to allowe or lyke of this iorney and I wolde my good ffather shold know that I will bothe salve his creditt and myne owne, with the lady and in suche manner as she shall well allowe of it. I do meane to acquaynt her with suche plausable excuses as she shall fynde no cause to condemne me of vngratfullnes. I wold not haue lost the good company of my good fater, yowr self and the rest of my ffrends for much more then I will speake of. It shall not be long before I will present yow with my poore self thoughe sufficyently riche if I may lyve in your good favors, etc. London this xx<sup>th</sup> of June [1588]

By your assured loving Brother

PHILIP GAVDY.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 58.)

SWEETE BROTHER,

I can not be vnmyndfull of your good self whom I have ever founde so kynde, And having so lately sent letters to my ffather from whom yow might then vnderstand the present newes, I purposed now to directe theise fewe lynes to your good consideration, presupposing assuredly of the good acceptance of them. Yow writt to me in your letter towching what order yow wold have me take with S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Smithe. I lyke very well of your dyrection therin, and as occasion shall be offered I am determyned to ffollowe the same course. But as yet I have nether sene S<sup>r</sup> Jhon either at courte or els in London, so that I know not of

any complaynt. But doubt not but that I will answere it for myne owne creditt, and to the dyscreditt of that proude asse. Mr. Lovell hathe made great suite to serve my L. Chaunceler, dyvers of his men enformed me so. Mr. Goldsmith and he ar very conversant together, and he is a meane of his preferment. Goldsmith told me very lately that he shold be his man, and haue his lyvery. He meanes to tryumphe over his enemyes ; he and his man Grigs get very solemnly together in Powles. Davy Gwyn that did so good service in the Galyas is sent out of Ireland, and here remaynethe prysoner, suspected to be our adversary on the behalf of the Duke of Modena, how it will fall out must be referred to the tryall of further tyme. What newes els I imparted to my father in his lettres. Sweete Brother, whatsoever els I have to do for the, let it suffice the that no servaunt thow hast can either be more carefull or willing to do the any service, and your busines shall not be forgotten. Brother I hope the tyme apoynted for the marryage must stande, for bothe my self and my workemen relye vppon that day, and they ar not to be commaunded so easily as others be. If I may heare from any of Harling I shall be pleased with all and what other occurans shall happen, they shall not be concealed from yow. And so with my most kyndest commendacions to yowr self and your good wyfe, and to Dun Antonio I committ yow to the tuition of th'allmighty this xth of November [1588 ?].

The Quene commethe to Somersett Howse vppon fryday, and vppon Tuesday next she is appoynted to heare a sermon at Powles, vppon Tuesday com sennight, ther is preparation made by my Lo. Chamberlain for her.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 70.)

GOOD BROTHER,

[In the first part of this letter Philip defends himself against his brother's accusations of not attending to his commissions and continues :] Vppon Sondag last the queen was at Powles, very

honorably wayted vppon, you may imagyne ther wanted no company.<sup>1</sup> It was no newes to wryte of the Shreifs S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Payton, and M<sup>r</sup> Tylneye.<sup>2</sup> The Quene removeth as this daye to Grenwiche. Serient Gawdy was yesterday made a judge of the Kinges (*sic*) Benche a thing not muche pleasing to himself.<sup>3</sup> I can not ascertayne yow of any other newes. Bolton wold have Burton vppon Tuesday next to go to Thetford, and ther he shall receyve a hamper of thinges for my father and brother. The marriage day is newly appoynted and not now to fayle it shall be at M<sup>r</sup> Syliards howse vppon Monday com sennight after the date herof, make good rekonig of the day, ffor by the grace of God there we shall all mete together. Have a care of the day for you shall not be deceyved in it. My L. Drury commends her to my oncle Anthony and your good self, and what further yow shall vnderstand at our meeting. I have morning clothe for my father and my oncle Anthony<sup>4</sup> but neither of them both can be at the funerall<sup>5</sup> for it is at the tyme of the mariag, and the greater Nayle ever dryves out the lesse. Justice Gawdy will not be ther as I thinke neither. Sweet Brother in what els thou hast vnkyndly tovched me in thy letter suspend thy judgment till I speake with the myself, etc.

This xixth of November [1588].

---

<sup>1</sup> On the 24th of November (o. s.), being Sunday, the Queen proceeded in state from Somerset Place to St. Paul's to return thanks for the victory over the Armada. See *Progresses of Queen Elizabeth*, vol ii.

<sup>2</sup> Sir John Payton and Philip Tylney, Esq., had been pricked as Sheriffs of Norfolk and Suffolk respectively.

<sup>3</sup> Francis Gawdy was made one of the Queen's Serjeants 17 May, 1582, and in this character was present at Fotheringay on the trial of Mary Queen of Scots. On the death of his half-brother Sir Thomas Gawdy he was nominated his successor as a judge of the Queen's Bench, 23 November, 1588. In 1605 he became Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, and died in 1606.

<sup>4</sup> Anthony Gawdy, half-brother to Philip's father.

<sup>5</sup> Sir Thomas Gawdy, buried at Redenhall, 12 December, 1588.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 65.)

SWEETE BROTHER,

Your kynde gratulations I receyved by your letter yow sent by Drake was not accepted in the meanest degree. And assure your self the faythfull love I beare yow may be compared to the love that was betwixt David and Jonathan which was exceeding the love of women. I speake it by the way of his comparyson. Your letters came to my hands but within this two dayes. My father bothe had bene here and had departed before Drake's comming. Sweet Brother I have not forgott the in any thing for all your busines. But at this tyme they cold not be brought, for my Mother hathe left ii gownes and other things to be brought next weeke, and one labor and one trunke shall best serve for bothe. I will remember the conysance at my comming downe.

Little newes I can aforde yow, vnlesse I shold seeme stale to yow, to tell yow of the making of two new counsellors S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Parrett,<sup>1</sup> and M<sup>r</sup> fforteskew.<sup>2</sup> S<sup>r</sup> ffrauncis Drake and S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Norris toke their leave as yesterday but not departing till [next] weeke.<sup>3</sup> . . . My fathers stay in towne and especyally at Court was so short, as I cold not compasse that yow and myself devysed of, for he was at the court but one only dinner, thoughe it be deferred it shall not be forgotten. I have sente yow the acquittance that I left heare at London in Sommer, I pray lay it vpp for me. Yow need not shew it any body, for all was suffycyently past before. My father I am assured is not yet come home, which made me refrayne my hand from writing. Sweet brother, thou

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Perrot, who had recently vacated the office of Lord Deputy of Ireland.

<sup>2</sup> John Fortescue, Master of the Great Wardrobe to her Majesty.

<sup>3</sup> "The Queen's fleet, under Sir Francis Drake, is getting ready to sail by the 15th of March . . . the total number of sail is calculated at 70, some say more." "[Sir John] Norris has been appointed General of the force. He is considered at present the best soldier in the country." The destination of this fleet, with Don Antonio, subsequently King of Portugal, on board, was Portugal. *Cal. State Papers, Spanish* 1587-1603, p. 512.



shalt ever dwell in my thoughts and governe them, and I will not forgett to do the any brotherly and loving service, recommend me to my Best Syster, her father served Luke and my self but a slippery parte, for he glyded very sone out of towne, commend me to my honest oncle Anthony. His wyfe much commends her to him. Commend me to my sisters and to Mr. Harvey and let them all know that my second speache in the parlament house is yet to make, it may be as wyse as any that hath yet spoken, for I am vntryed and therfore it hanges in suspence. Sweet Brother I wold make convenyent hast to come to the, but no leave will be gyven to any that I yet hear of, but the continuance of the parlament will not be long. Bacon<sup>1</sup> is very silent in the howse, he restoreth for a further tyme.

London this xxj<sup>th</sup> of february [1589].

---

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 67.)

SIR,

I am vncerteyne of your being at Harling neverthesse I have adventured to directe my lettres to yow, In whose absence I wishe my good Brother might have the pervsing of them. And as neare as I can I will acquaynt yow with such newes as hathe happened and suche busines as hath passed my hands. And first for the dyscharge which my mother<sup>2</sup> desired to have from the Coferer and the rest of the officers. I was with them all my self severally, bothe by intreaty and persuasion I used the best meanes I colde. I was with them all together at the counting howse. They seemed to be wondrous willing to pleasure me so farr as they might, But this is certeyne that they neither do, nor will graunt to any of what sort soever the lyke manner of dyscharge. And hearinge my mothers name nominated, they sayde it was the only

<sup>1</sup> Edmund Bacon, son and heir of Sir Nicholas Bacon, Knt., M.P. for Eye. In the next Parliament (February, 1592-3) Philip Gawdy (who sat at this time for Thetford, succeeded him in the representation of that borough.

<sup>2</sup> Philip's own mother had died in 1587. Concerning his father's second marriage with Margaret, widow of Thomas Darcy, *v.* Introduction

thing that was directed agaynst all the officers. Yet with as much frendshipp as I mought well request at ther hands, they have taken specyall order by name that none shall meddle with any of your men that dwell at Tolson. And indeade I thincke you shall not neade muche to feare the purveiors, for ther is a specyall bill past agaynst them in the parlament house. And that hathe muche nettled all the officers of the grene clothe. For your bill of impost I have it ready, more than that he was not in towne, whose hand is very requisite shold be added to the bill. The last Sonday being at the court I will describe a salutation that passed betwixt M<sup>r</sup> Lovell and my self touching yow, and in very truthe, and as neare as I may in the very same wordes. I was talking with my L. Wharton,<sup>1</sup> and M<sup>r</sup> Dacres of the Northe.<sup>2</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Lovell standing a good prety way from vs, cam and whispered in M<sup>r</sup> Dacres eare, and sodenly and very softly he spake in my eare to this effecte without any other salutation, and my self and he hath had no speaches since our last meeting at Walton. But now to the purpose this was his speches very abruptly, Yo<sup>r</sup> father will nowe leave his slaunderous speaches of me, and presently runn his way without suffering me to reply. I followed him as fast as I might, and told him that my father had neither sayde or done any thing, but that he wold iustefy to be honest, and in his absence I wold iustefy it to be true to his face wher he wold disprove me. Well sayth he, he hathe vsed very spitefull and slaunderous speaches touching my creditt. Then I desired to know what the effecte of the woordes shold be; he answered that he wold keepe them to him self, and yow shold heareafter heare of them; then I replied that I toke it for a lye and him for a lyar in the reporting of it, and not mayntayning it. Well cosin saythe he I have nothing to say to yow, this matter concerneth your father my great enemy. And he shall answer it els wher, and yf I be not muche abused by my friendes I know it to be very true. I vrged him farr to have had some knowledge therof, but he passed it over and called me cosin, and by no meanes I cold make him angry with me. He told me

<sup>1</sup> Philip Wharton, Baron Wharton, died 1625.

<sup>2</sup> Francis Dacre, youngest son of William 3rd Baron Dacre.

that I did the parte of a sonne in the behalfe of a father and in conclusion told me that within fewe dayes I shold vnderstand the whole circumstance therof, but as yet I have no vnderstanding therof: and so I must leave it till I heare further therof, and then yow shall have notice therof accordingly. But assure yow S<sup>r</sup> I gather this of his vilde condition, that Malice was his mother, and envy nursed him, and shame brought him into the world and never will forsake him till he leave world and all. I speake not altogether of the spleane, for the truthe leadeth me to say muche more. He that hewethe at the Body of the tree intendeth the destructione of the braunches, and the lyfe of the one preservethe the creditt of the other. If I have spent to many wordes about him that is not worthe one good word, I am to crave pardon for the same, somtymes a faulte escapes the prynter, vsuall with moste wryters. S<sup>r</sup> Frances Drake and his company went as yesterday being Wedensday to their shippes. My L. of Worster departed out of this life the laste weeke. My l. of Worster<sup>1</sup> is deade, and yet my l. of Worster liveth.<sup>2</sup> S<sup>r</sup> William Winter<sup>3</sup> hathe taken his leave of all his frendes in this present world, and amongst all theise great men an old acquayntance of my brothers and myne hathe taken the same course, and I hope sayled to heaven, Tom Carrew, he was an honest man w<sup>ch</sup> makes me remember him amongst his betters.<sup>4</sup> . . . Let my affectionate duty be rememberd to yowr good self in all dutyfull manner, my humble duty to my good [mother?] for whom I will not forgett to do any service. Let me be in loving manner remembred to my good Brother and his good wyfe. To my oncle Anthony Gavdy, to my loving Sisters, wishing yow all and my self abundance of the favor of the most mighty. From London this xxvij of ffebruary [1589]. My returne shall be before the end of the Parlament for it is thought it will hold long.

---

<sup>1</sup> William Somerset, Earl of Worcester, died 21 February, 1588 [9].

<sup>2</sup> Evidently Gawdy's adaptation of "Le Roi est mort, vive le Roi."

<sup>3</sup> Of co. Gloucester (probably of Lydney), knighted in 1573.

<sup>4</sup> Letter torn.

TO HIS FATHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 69.)

SIR,

. . . The parlament is lyke to continew very long, and the end therof is not lyke shortly to fall out. It is thought it shall be but proroged. The mynister of Kenninghall was with me aboute some truble he is brought into, by reason of woordes, he brought me a letter from yow that by my means he might fynde some favor. I spake to M<sup>r</sup> Vycechamberlyne for him and he had referred him to M<sup>r</sup> Wade. I talked with M<sup>r</sup> Wade about him, And he had posted him over to My L. of Canterbury, and further I have not yet heard of him, but assure yow, Sir, I will not fayle to do him any pleasure in respecte of the place he cam last from. I sent last week a frayle of fygges, reysons and allmons. . . . I heare my oncle Anthony is at Graves End and further I heard not from him, he attendethe vppon his Mistress a thing vsual amongst all good servants. Myne owne experyence hathe taught me, I have bene a servant and had a Mistress. And I ever found that the greater the service, the greater was the reward. His desert is great, his favor shall be answerable therto. I wish I might have sene him, and whensoever, I desire to be especyally commended to him. Ther is very freshe newes and very trewe that there was a warrant made to acuse my L. of Arundell,<sup>1</sup> and I thinke he is indyted and is lyke to communicate further by degrees. I am sorry his deserts shold now clayme for justice. I wish he had had better regard of himself. His oncle<sup>2</sup> and my L. William<sup>3</sup> ar restrayned of ther lyberty. I mean to come so spedely to yow that I will referr the certeynty of all other newes to myne own

<sup>1</sup> Philip Howard, Earl of Arundel, eldest son of Thomas, Duke of Norfolk, was charged with high treason. He was accused of praying for the success of the Spanish Armada. Brought to trial 14 April, 1589, he was condemned to death, but remained in the Tower till 1595, when he died, his death being attributed to poison.

<sup>2</sup> Lord Henry Howard, restored to favour in 1600, and created Earl of Northampton in 1603.

<sup>3</sup> Lord William Howard, known as Belted Will, 3rd son of Thomas, Duke of Norfolk.

reporting. Let my humble dutye be remembred to your good self and my good Mother, my very kynd and harty commendacions to my good Brother, and his wyfe, whose love is dearer to me then Thowsands. Let me be commended to my good systers, etc.

London this xij<sup>th</sup> of March [1589]

---

TO HIS "VERY GOOD SISTER GAVDY THE YONGER."

(Eg. 2804, f. 62.)

SWEETE SISTER,

I found my self much favored at your handes that it wold please yow in suche kynde sorte to remeember your poore frendes by wryting. I had answered your letters long synce, but that I had not all things ready before this, answerable to send with the same.

I have sent yow downe according to your request half an ell of blacke velvett, half a quarter of white satten, and a paire of truncke sleeves. The pryce yow shall knowe hearafter. I have bought them as well and as good cheape as my skill might afford me, for the manner of wearing of their hoodes as the courte. Some weare cripins<sup>1</sup> some weare none. Some weare sattin of all collors with their upper border and some weare none. Some one of them weares this daye with all theise fashions, and the nexte daye without. So that I fynd nothing more certayne then their vncertaynty, which made me forbear to sende yow any thing further of myne owne devise vntill I heare further from yow. But when it shall please yow to vse mee, I shall be still ready, and best contented when I shall be any wayes employed to do yow any Service. If any shold tell yow I made greater accounte of yow then of all my sisters besides, yow might easily beleve him the reason is playne. But I

<sup>1</sup> Crepine = a net or caul for the hair formerly worn by ladies, and also part of a hood.

protest to yow that if I had xx<sup>tye</sup> Sisters they all severally cold not drawe that affection from my heart that yowr self dothe entyrlie. I have vowed my selfe yowrs, and will allwayes continewe a brother more then of ordinary corse, and wold be gladd to be accounted of at your handes somewhat extrordinaryly, at leaste if I may lyve any waye to deserve it. It suffiseth me that I conceyve the best of your good meaning towards me, and I hope vndoubtedly not to be deceyved in this my plausible imaginacion. And in this pleasing perswasion I will now leave yow, desiring yew not to forgett me to yowr kynde beddfellowe my wonderfull good Brother, etc. London this xj<sup>th</sup> of Aprill.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 117.)

GOOD SWEETE BROTHER,

. . . I had this morning a letter from Tolson,<sup>1</sup> And touching my comming thither I will set the downe the certeyne tyme when I will not by the grace of God breake with the, the Wedensday after the end of the terme, or Thursday by the Grace of God we will not fayle but meet with yow there. M<sup>r</sup> Good commeth with me, and we must both stay the end of the terme about the recept of the mony which we ar then promysed and It must be wonderfully earnestly followed, If we go not by my oncle Syliards we will be ther vppon the Wedensday night and so be ther to meet with the and assure thy self I will not fayle the. It is the Wedensday just before Whitsontyde, And If it had not been partly vppon myn owne busines and partly vppon my fathers busines I wold have mett the before. I thinke my father hath sent and my mother together for twenty thinges, And some will not be ready this sennight. The badges shall all come with me to Tolson I hope well made, I will bring the gyrdle and hangers with me, And now, sweet Brother, I will tell the of the maner of my beinge with my L[ady] Framlingham. I assure the I went two her of a very whett

<sup>1</sup> Tolleshunt Darcy, co. Essex.

day, and founde her at the howse wher you were married, for ther she lyethe. But Sir Charles is not heare. I have bene very carfull of all your messages to her, after some fewe words of vnkindness she used touching a telltale in the howse, that should use some woords betwixt my syster and her she fell into best vaynes that might be, and protested that she accounted not more dearly of any Living then of yow two, and yourself the honestest man that lyveth. And now to the poynte. I was in hande with her for some thinges for my syster and to speake to her husband to have care of her in this necessary and needful tyme, she saythe, that when she commeth to Harling she will bring my sister a huchefull of things by those wordes, and she will besydes speake to S<sup>r</sup> Charles. She was once determyned to have come home by Harling, And in the end thought it somewhat to much out of the way. She thought much that my Syster hathe not plyed her with no letters. I told her she had written and shold not want any, she sayd two lynes of her hand shold fetche her at any tyme, and at any tyme after we come into that contry that yow or I shall go for her. . . . I can not forgett the party that dwelleth [near] her syde, and I wold fayne have heard somewhat from the touching her, and somewhat from Jertrard, And how long my L. Nevell stayeth in the contry. I have bene often with myne oncle, And as I fynd the expences in the cause so will I deale with him as thou doest advyse me. I can hitherto learne little but that it is generally spoken, that Neither my L. nor my oncle will assure any Lyving to either, but that they shold stand to one an others corteysy. We shall knowe more, And then it shall not be hidd from the. But one good signe ther is, I can not learne by any that my oncle will assure any land. The Quene dynd yesterday at My L. Chauncelors.

No newes of the fleete. No newes of my L. of Essex. My L. of Buckhurst<sup>1</sup> goeth into fflaunders out of hand, and he is a Knight of the Garter for certeyne, and the King of the Scottes.<sup>2</sup>

My Sweete Brother I will remember the day of meeting with

<sup>1</sup> Elected K.G. 22 April, and instituted 18 December, 1589. He went into the Low Countries in November of that year.

<sup>2</sup> K.G. 24 April, 1590.

the at Tolson, and yow meane while love me, And let me heare from the by lettres as sone as thow canst, Commend me to my best Syster, etc. this ii of Maye [1589].

---

TO RICHARD ASHLEY.

(Eg. 2804, f. 72.)

GOOD M<sup>r</sup> ASHLEY,

I am at this instant to vse y<sup>r</sup> friendship more then ever I was vppon any cause in my lyfe, and this assure yow it is about a matter to benyfitt my selfe. I pray lend me five or six pound for a month or six weekes. I wold have borrowed tenn pound yf yow might hav spared it, but that might fall out to be more then yow might well departe with on the sodayne. M<sup>r</sup> Ashley it is vppon an extrardinary cause to do my self a great pleasure, as yow shall have good knowledge therof as it be long, thoughe as yet I wold have it vnknownen to any. Therfore as you love me, and esteame of my well doing send me presently by this bearer v<sup>l</sup> or vj<sup>l</sup>. If you do not fynde me to requitt it thinke not my name to be Gavdy. If you feare to send it by my man send any els w<sup>th</sup> him, that may delyver it me. Yet you may send it by this token, that I saw you last terme at my cosin Woolmer his chamber, when you went vp w<sup>th</sup> Shering. But send a messinger w<sup>th</sup> him, and he shall not loose his labor. M<sup>r</sup> Ashley, what shift soever you make send me it this night, and he shall stay vppon it, for this muche I tell you in secrett that it is about a wyfe shall have fyve hunderd marke a yeare whatsoever els, and suche busines must not be foreslowed. I know you to be wyse enoughe and therefore I hope you will consider of yo<sup>r</sup> frendes cause. And let not this be any further knowen till I speake w<sup>th</sup> you my self, or that I sent to you about any such thing. By the grace of God you shall be most honestly repayd ether w<sup>th</sup> in this monthe or vj weekes at the farthest. And so hoping of yo<sup>r</sup> frendship at this instant w<sup>th</sup> out all fayle. I wish you well. ffrom Westharling in hast this xxiiiij<sup>th</sup> of June [*circa* 1590].

Y<sup>r</sup> loving frend to use

PH. GAVDY.



## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 75.)

SWEETE BROTHER,

Overcharged w<sup>th</sup> haste I will make me wryte w<sup>th</sup> the shorter style, Till it please God that I maye wryte from Plimmouth, when I will lode yow w<sup>th</sup> newes.<sup>1</sup> How S<sup>r</sup> Richard Greenfeild<sup>2</sup> and my L. Thomas<sup>3</sup> have sought for me I will not tell yow. Lett Tom in his simplycety tell yow whether he sawe them make any reckoning of me or no. To be shorte the newes I know is thus muche. The Quene hath commaunded all possible speede to be made. S<sup>r</sup> Richard and other captaynes will presently go to the court w<sup>th</sup> whom I will go. And so away as fast as the shippes will fall downe. I have allready bought my armes and Targett the very fellowes to my L. Thomas and S<sup>r</sup> Richarde. My apparell will be made to night, what is necessary els I do provide besides the great kyndnes I fynde bothe at S<sup>r</sup> Richardes handes and at M Lochoundes.<sup>4</sup> Sweete Brother ther remayneth no greife but one, the parting from thy sweete company. I pray god send us a ioyfull meeting. I thanke god I go w<sup>th</sup> good creditt, and I hope to winne muche honor. Sweet Brother I will wryte from Plommouth the hole epistles of an howres reading, when you shall know more than all. And I pray desire my good oncle Anthony to spare me this tyme for letters. And let him looke for some from Plommouth. And in meane tyme I wish his love and favor as muche as any

<sup>1</sup> Philip Gawdy went out as a volunteer with the expedition that sailed under the command of Lord Thomas Howard in April, 1591.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Richard Greenfeild, or Grenville to employ the name by which he has been handed down to fame, though he wrote himself Greynville, was Vice-Admiral and commanded the "Revenge."

<sup>3</sup> Lord Thomas Howard, the commander of the expedition, sailed on board the "Defiance." In a letter from John Stanhope dated Greenwich, 10 March, 1591, he writes, "My Lord Thomas Howard hath kissed her Majesty's hand and is gone down to his ships." See *Illustrations of British History*, Lodge, ii. 437.

<sup>4</sup> Captain Lahorne, the captain of the soldiers on board the "Revenge." *Naval Tracts of Sir William Monson*, ed. M. Oppenheim for Naval Record Society, i. p. 259.

freundes in the world after y<sup>r</sup> self. Recommend me to him w<sup>th</sup> all affectionate kyndnes, to my good sister y<sup>r</sup> wyfe three or foure thousand tymes for she founde fault that I was in her debte touching commendacions, I pray god blesse the boye who yf he had leysure to vnderstand me I wold send some few commendacions in meane while to M<sup>rs</sup> Wright, M<sup>r</sup> Harvy and his wyfe and all the rest of our frends. I have sent you some bookes to reade. I meane to write to my Lady Bacon from Plommouth. I praye let me leave you for this present for I am hastned a thousand wayes, and the shorter you fynde me now, I will make a doble amendes. This present monday [March 1591].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 77.)

Sweet Brother gyve me leave to wryte meryly to the. I hope in God it shall not be my last. I pray God send us a ioyfull meeting and yf thow knewest how muche I wer greaved and how often I sighe when I thinke of the losse I have of thy sweete company thow woldest pytye me. Make some store of this my lettre till my returne. I thanke God I have a good armo<sup>r</sup> a good target as any man that goeth in o<sup>r</sup> voyage. I am put in to good linnen. My oncle Anthony hath knowen the day when I have not had so many shirtes by seuen or eight. And now sweet brother I must leave to entertayne thy sweete spiryte w<sup>th</sup> any further writing, for my hand beginnethe to cleave to my penn, ffor I have written many lettres. And I am now presently framinge a loving and kynd letter to my good oncle Anthony. Recommend me to my very good syster, and let her [know] that I love her truly, and faythfully. I th[ank] God I beare no malice. For I protest I w[ish] her as much good as myne owne sowle. And [trust] she will euer love me, till I gyve her other [? cause]. And that shall not be till the salt seas [be dried] up and then we shall come home for want of water. Recommend me to thy

sweet boye, I pray God blesse him and make him a good man and th<sup>1</sup> . . . throughe him. Let Mrs. Wright knowe that [I shall] not forgett her, but thinke that the boy will have more witt, and more mastershipp than her self within this three or fouer yeare. Recommende me to my oncle Nunn and his wyfe, and yf my hande tyre [not] I will wryte some fewe lynes to my aunte. I would have written to my syster, but that she may conn (?) your letters. Commend me hartely to M<sup>r</sup> Harvy and his wyfe. And I praye Intreat them all to [join] with you in your prayers for me. Commend me lastly to<sup>1</sup> thy best thoughts, wher if I may ever dwell [I can] compare with any in happynes. I am lothe to leave [off] but I shall bothe tyre myself in wryting and [you in] reading. Farwell sweet Brother, and I pray [God] blesse us and send us a ioyfull meetinge.

ffrom Her Maiestyes good shipp the revenge this iiij<sup>th</sup> of  
[April 1591]

Your most assured and loving Brother till [death].

PH. GAVDY.

Sweet Brother let me entreat the to delyver this letter to Jertrard, and as ever thow lovest me let not any lyving know therof, and I charge the by that love thou owest me not to breake it up. And so I remayne ever to be commended by the thy true and faythfull brother.

Sir Richarde Grenfeild . . . paper was no longer but turne the leafe . . .

The few lines written by Sir Richard Grenville to Bassingbourne Gawdy in the margin of this letter bear testimony that "no sicnis, no daunger, no fear . . . nor no extremities of wether, mutine, hard[ship] or other perill or grefe could provoke" Philip to return. At the end is the bold signature "R. Greynv[ile]," somewhat mutilated unfortunately, as is the

<sup>1</sup> This letter is unfortunately torn on the outer edge.

whole note. On the back of Philip's letter is the following note.

GOOD MR. GAUDYE,

Yo<sup>r</sup> Brother and I being become companions in a Sea voyage, and having allready tasted I thinke the extremist furye of the weather, and lyke to tri the worst that our enemyse can do agaynst vs, hath bred in me suche a brotherly love towards him that I cold not leave so loving and good a brother as you are to him vnsaluted nowe at our last farewell. He hath had his helth beyonde all expectacion of them that knew him and I doubt not but will answer or passe the expectacion of his best frindes in all other attemptes or daungers wher of ther can not want store in the action that we have vndertaken. And so hoping that if wee add nothing to our former reputacion, wee will loose none of that wee have, in which hope I praye you continew till God send us to see you in North foulk I bid you very hartely farewell. From aboard her ma<sup>ties</sup> good Ship the Revenge the 4 of Aprill.

Your very loving frind,

WILLIAM LANGHARN.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 79.)

MY ONLY SWEETEST AND BEST BELOVED BROTHER,

Thy hert can not conceyve the wonderfull ioye I have, that god hath given me a meanes to make my love to be still better knownen to the. I hope you have longe since receyved my lettres directed from Plommouth from whence we immediatly sett sayle, and have bene ever synce at sea. All our adventures and iurnalles it were to tedious to sett downe particularly. Besides I keepe a note of every dayes action w<sup>ch</sup> by gods grace you shall be acquaynted w<sup>th</sup> when it shall please the allmighty to gyve vs a

blessed meeting, yet in Breife I will somewhat touche the course we have hitherto taken. From Plommouthe we sayled the whole fleete together two dayes when o<sup>r</sup> shipp the revenge lost my L. and the whole fleete. They all put in at Famouth being dryven thether by the extremity of the weather. We tackt about to the wetherward and lay vppon the coste of ffrance Betwene Sylla<sup>1</sup> and Ushin<sup>2</sup> wher we did endure very sore weather as might be abiden at the sea We spent bothe our mastes, but by Godes grace, they wer espyed in good tyme, and strengthned w<sup>th</sup> fishes,<sup>3</sup> wolding<sup>4</sup> and calking, and now thankes be to God, they be in very good plight When we cam vppon the northren Cape we descryed fyve sayle wherof fower wer of Hamboroughe, and one frenchman was of Newhaven whom S<sup>r</sup> Richard Greinfeild toke into his shipp, and placed a master and [some] of his owne men in her, bycause we were alone, and had lost all o<sup>r</sup> company. Of the rest of the flemminges we borrowed Some vytayle of them, for other good thing had they not any, but only salte, and gave them ther passe home, afterward we sayled alonge the Coste of Spayne in the baye of Portingale, wher aboutes the Burlinges<sup>5</sup> vppon the xvij<sup>th</sup> of Aprill we descryed in o<sup>r</sup> toppmast vij or viij sayle. We wer alone, and o<sup>r</sup> small frenche flyboote, we supposed one of them by her hugenes to be either a Caruke or an Armado. We prepared o<sup>r</sup> selves to fight, and made all thinges ready. When we tackte aboute, and cam romer of them all, we founde that some of them were of o<sup>r</sup> owne fleete, and might easily perceyve that they had this great ship in chase. Ther wer two pinisses the Lions whelpp and the Delight shott some v or vi shott and she never budged. But presently vppon our comming in she presently stroke her top sayles and all other sayles, and yelded herself to S<sup>r</sup> Richard Greinfeild, who placed a master and some of his owne men in her, and we toke out some men out of the rest of the shippes and Exchaunged flemingers for them. But

<sup>1</sup> Scilly.<sup>2</sup> Ushant.<sup>3</sup> Long pieces of wood for mending masts, etc.<sup>4</sup> Stout rope.<sup>5</sup> Berlenges or Burlings, a group of small islands off the coast of Portugal, near Cape Caroveiro.

she fell out to be a hulke of Lubecke a marvelous huge one, of a Thousand Tunn laden all w<sup>th</sup> great mastes, and deale, w<sup>ch</sup> falleth out to be very good pryse, for it is the Kyng of Spaynes, and we founde a Portingale pylate, w<sup>ch</sup> had the Kynges letter to passe them from Lysbone to the Groyne for preparation for his shippes; she is valued to be worthe tenn Thousand pound. We ther mett w<sup>th</sup> vij of o<sup>r</sup> shippes which cam from my L. that morning in this chace. When we wer in ye height of the Southern Cape called Cape Snt. Vyncent we descryed v sayle whom we did beare withall and found them to be my L. and fower other sayle w<sup>th</sup> him. We haled my L. and made great ioye to meete him, and that day we came westward corse of the cape and have lyen ever since at the hull tariing for some of o<sup>r</sup> shippes that be lost. My L. and S<sup>r</sup> Richard presently determyned to send home this pryse, and hathe sent home one Jhon Badder (?) that was S<sup>r</sup> Robert Southwelles man who promysed me faithfull delyvery of this letter at your house in Norfolk. Sweet Brother I am become a reasonable good marryner, and Thankes be to God as stronge at the sea as any in o<sup>r</sup> company. I want nothing but thy sweete Company. I do continually meditate vpon the, and veryfy the old proverb *Celum, non animum mutant, qui trans mare currunt*.<sup>1</sup> Sweet Brother my Lord sent for me this day to be with him<sup>2</sup>, so that I am hasted by him wonderfully to dyspache my letter, for he sendes awaye with all speede. I honor him much and haue greate cause to love him. I thanke god I am contented with this lyfe w<sup>ch</sup> I have framed my selfe to. We want the sweet flowers and herbes to breathe vpon, ffor heare we fynd nothing but only *Celum vndique, et vndique mare*. Ther is not a good allehouse within twenty leagues of vs. We are going presently to the Ilandes<sup>3</sup> and whether further as we shall have intelligence. Ther is all ready fower sayle come home to Snt. Lucers in Andolusia laden with ten thousand myllions vj weakes before o<sup>r</sup> comminge. I thanke god we have

<sup>1</sup> Horace, Ep. I. xi. 27.

<sup>2</sup> Hence this letter is dated from the "Defiance," Lord Thomas Howard's ship.

<sup>3</sup> The Azores.

founde some kaukes, but got no mony, but some peeces of viij. and very fewe of them. Sweete Brother let my oncle Anthony knowe that I love him as dearly as my M<sup>re</sup> and he shall know that if it please God I may safely returne home to you<sup>r</sup> sweete house I will be so plausable to him every waye as he shall fynde me an honest and loving kynsman. I know he loveth me w<sup>th</sup> an honest hart. I pray god I may deserve it. Only the good company of Harling maketh me longe home. And when I think of Norff[olk] and yo<sup>r</sup> sweet companyes, and some one besydes of that country I sighe and saye the sea doth not content me. In any wyse tenn thousand tymes recommend me to my oncle Anthony, and I desire that I may be remembered in the end of his prayers, ffor we have great neade therof, and truly we are subiecte to many daungers. It is a place that makethe the most dissolute, and dysordered person lyving to remember God. I pray God gyve vs all of his grace. I have all ready gotten a fyne carde and other tooles belonging to navigation. And hetherto I may iustly say that I haue travelled farther then any of my name. If you looke in yo<sup>r</sup> mapp at home you shall fynde that the corse that we have sayled; for the first poynt after we wer past the coste of ffrance that we touched was Cape finister the Northern Cape. Then we cam in height of the burlinges, next in height of the rocke Castecales,<sup>1</sup> and the Groyne. We wer then so neere the shore as we might see one of the Kinges howses, then we did next beare vppon Cape Pitcher<sup>2</sup> and so lastly cam to the landes end, the southern Cape caled Cape St. Vincent, and just by that is Cape Sacre,<sup>3</sup> betwixt w<sup>ch</sup> two there standeth a fryery and a castle of the Kinges called the blockhouse; we wer within some thre leagues of the shore, and synce we have ronne a westward corse some thirty leagues towardes the Iland, and presently after the dispache of this hulke lying now at the hull, we shall all sett sayle. It is thought, and allmost truly knowne that two of o<sup>r</sup> shippes ar caste away, the Mone and the Dysdayne in the fowle weather. Theise seas that we be now in ar allmoste as sweet as a ryver in the contrye. Sweet

<sup>1</sup> Cascaes.<sup>2</sup> Espicher.<sup>3</sup> Sagres.

Brother let my good syster know that I love her muche, and must be commended to her best thoughts. Recommend me to thy Best boye,<sup>1</sup> and I pray God blesse him. I pray salute S<sup>r</sup> Charles<sup>2</sup> and my Lady w<sup>th</sup> some commendacions from a poore maryner who yf he doth chaunce to sayle in Debun<sup>3</sup> ryver, that for that night he may ly at anker at Crowe Hall.<sup>4</sup> Recommende me to S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Bacon<sup>5</sup> and his good Lady. To Munn[by], cause I love his sweete nature and condition, Nann Bacon<sup>6</sup> hathe cause to love me for I haue ever wished her as big fortune as any woman can deserve. I hope you have delyvered my letter safely to that party that I entreted yow, and gyve her but only thus muche to knowe that my whole trust dependeth vppon her,<sup>7</sup> and commend me to her, and let her only remember her best kynsman, and most loving ffreind she hathe. My L. doth now promyse me that the hulke shall stay all night, yf it dothe I will come vppon my oncle Anthony w<sup>th</sup> some lynes, and my lady Bacon shall know that I can wryte. Otherwyse I hope that she will content herself w<sup>th</sup> the syght of yo<sup>r</sup> letters and my lady will be pleased to heare from you that her poore freind resteth at her commaunde. And acquaynt her w<sup>th</sup> suche poore newes as o<sup>r</sup> common wealthe will yeild. Let me be recommended to my oncle Nunn, and his good wyfe a good woman, to M<sup>r</sup> Harvy and his wyfe. And sweete Brother let my servaunts know that I remember them all and wishe them muche good. The Southron seas can not blowe the remembrance of my

<sup>1</sup> His brother's eldest son Framlingham, born 1589.

<sup>2</sup> Sir C. Framlingham.

<sup>3</sup> Deben or Thredling river, near Debenham, in Suffolk.

<sup>4</sup> Crow's Hall in Debenham, belonging to Sir Charles Framlingham, at whose death in 1595 it passed to his grandson Framlingham Gawdy. Anne, the daughter and heir of Sir C. Framlingham, was the first wife of Bassingbourne Gawdy.

<sup>5</sup> The eldest son of the Lord Keeper and half-brother of "Lord Bacon." He was knighted in 1588, and was the first person advanced to the dignity of baronet in 1611. Died in 1624.

<sup>6</sup> ? Anne Bacon, daughter of Sir Nicholas, who married Sir Robert Drury, of Hawsted.

<sup>7</sup> This was the letter sent to his brother for delivery in his own letter of the 3rd of April, the postscript to which runs: "Let me entreat the to delyver this letter to Jertrard" [? Gertrude]. See above, p. 55.



frendes out of my mynde. I com lastly to the mayn chaunce which is to thy sweet self, Let me be once a day remembred of the in thy prayers, and amongst the rest of thy sweete thoughts. And let us all pray one for an other, some for the sea, some for the lande, and so ioyne in one. Sweet Brother forgyve and pardon the faultes of my iouth, and beleve not all tales, though the best wer to muche. But I thanke God I am repentaunt, and meane by Gods grace to eschewe the lyke corses heereafter. I know thow art both wyse and loving enoughe. Sweet Brother take suche corse as may be most for my ereditt, and thy ease. And now let me conclude with the best and most faythfull affection that ever any brother colde beare to his brother, And I hope that God will send vs a happy meeting about some fower months hence. ffrom aboarde his Ma<sup>ties</sup> good shipp the Defyance this xxiiij<sup>th</sup> of Aprill [1591].

Your most assured and ever loving Brother

PH. GAVDY.

Sweete Brother let my geldings be very well lokte to that they may be fatt agayne next wynter, and I hope thow wilt remember that I shall haue a fyne gelding of the third wynter to make vpp my consorte, and I hope by godes grace to wayte of the often this wynter w<sup>th</sup> my fyne geldinges.

Sweete Brother I was enioyned that I shold not forgett S<sup>r</sup> Richard Greinfeildes his commendacions and M<sup>r</sup> Lahorns who is as honest man men as lyveth, he hopeth hereafter of y<sup>or</sup> better acquayntance.

My Sweete Brother it was a happ to meete w<sup>th</sup> this hulke agayne vppon May day being an unweildy vessell abought the midwayne betwixt Snt. Mihilles <sup>1</sup> and the Cape. Ther hath not any thing synce happened worth the writing but only this, we sonke a carvell, wher we only saved thre skore iarres of oyle, the men and a bushell of letters w<sup>th</sup> they carryed of intelligence to the Islandes to meete w<sup>th</sup> the fleete comming home, whither we are now going. The most of vs like Lyons that haue bene

<sup>1</sup> St. Michael, an island in the Azores.

allmost famished for want of praye, or rather like a beare robbed of her whelppes. Sweet Brother I do this day wishe my selfe a maying at Harling, w<sup>th</sup> a sodayne returne. Once agayne farwell to thy sweet selfe, this first of Maye. [1591.]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 81.)

MY SWEETEST AND BEST BELOVED BROTHER,

I am muche pleased y<sup>t</sup> I lyve in hope my lettres shall come into thy handes. And thoughe that yet o<sup>r</sup> bodyes be separated I hoope that hereafter God shall send vs a ioyfull meeting that shall fall out for my creditt and thy best lyking. If I shold wryte in a Thousandcircumstances the end wold fall out that I muche esteame of yow above any Lyving. And yet some one hath a specyall interest in me besydes. I pray God send vs a mutuall ioy and coniunction. Therfore I will not trouble yow w<sup>th</sup> any further Invention of Kynde phrases, ffor the tyme hasteth and the Captayne is ready to sett sayle, Who cam this daye w<sup>th</sup> lettres to my L., S<sup>r</sup> Richard Grenfeild and the rest of the Captayns from the counsell, and is presently returned w<sup>th</sup> lettres for England, his name is Captayne flemming. We staye and pray every day hartely for the spanishe fleetes comming, and yf they come not sodeynly I thank God we ar and shall be suffycyently provided to looke for ther longer comming. Synce my last wryting we have had some adventurs. We watred at fflowers.<sup>1</sup> And I sawe the dolphin corse the flying fishe wherof I sawe one flye as far as yowr yong partriches will do at the first flight. I thanke God we have good shippes w<sup>th</sup> vs bothe of her Ma<sup>ties</sup> and otherwyse. I never had my health better in my lyfe thankes be to God and the better for the good vsage bothe of S<sup>r</sup> Richard, and Captayne Lahorne, whose commendacions I willed to remember to you, and to my oncle Anthonye alone from his kynsman S<sup>r</sup> Richard

<sup>1</sup> "At Flores in the Azores Sir Richard Grenville lay."

*Tennyson.*

Grenfeild. I am bounde to them both in many cortesyes. I lyke the sea and the sea lyfe, and the company at sea, as well as any that ever I lyved w<sup>th</sup> all. The place is good and healthfull to a willing mynde. We heard newes of some of o' men going into ffraunce. I pray God send them good speede. [Then follows thirty lines containing remembrances for numerous relations and friends: to his brother's wife "let her imagyne that I am now so in love w<sup>th</sup> the sea as I had rather be married to a mirmayde except only in Norfolk" . . . "And Gertrard must not be forgotten by any meanes, she is my neare kynswomen. I hope she will not forgett her faythfull frendes." ] He concludes:

And this pleaseth me muche to thinke *post sevas vndas tranquillia* [sic]. And though ther be some stormes endured at sea, yet the end is honorable, and sweete, and pleasing to any that takethe the corse with which lyfe I am greatly in love almost as muche as with my Mistress. I can apoynte no certeynty of my comming. But so sone as it pleaseth God to see vs happely and contentedly in England yow shall presently by Gods grace heare of me. Commend me lastly to thyne owne harte and most loving thoughts, and thinke somtyme of him that dayly museth, and nightly dreamethe of thy welldoing, etc.

ffrom aborrd her Ma<sup>tes</sup> good shipp the revenge. This vj<sup>th</sup> of July [1591]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804. f. 83.)

GOOD BROTHER,

The fortunes of warres have ever bene doubtfull and vncertayne. ffor the place I now remayne in was ever far vnlooked for at my handes, and though I well know your estate to be very meane, and farr vnable to do me any good, yet in love I could not chose but wryte to yowe. I knowe not whether yow may safly travell out of yo<sup>r</sup> howse or howe yow have compounded w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> creditors. But yf yow can not conveniently ryde yo<sup>r</sup> self to London, I wishe that yow may send some other to my L.

Thomas <sup>1</sup> to deale for me, for w<sup>th</sup> out his ayde I know yow can do me no good of yo<sup>r</sup> self. I have had my liberty ever synce my comming while w<sup>th</sup>in this fortnight and allwayes my lyberty was promysed as the rest of o<sup>r</sup> shipp had, and when I expected the same and went for my passe I was sent to the castle of Lyshborne thoughe they had sent others of the same shipp far better then myself home for England. I have endured much sycknes in this contrye, I thanke God at this instant somewhat recoverd. I have had great wrong in this country by reason of fals reportes, ffor I am reported to be the sonne of the cheife iudge of London, or els of my L. Mayor of London, or els of some other noble howse. The vntruthe therof is best knowen to yo<sup>r</sup> self, o<sup>r</sup> ffather being a poore man of the contry, a yonger brother and dead two yeares synce. They request a captayne called Diogio Daller for me, whosoever best knoweth me will thinke it an vnreasonable demande. I was without any office in the ship, and as I wrytt to my L. that soldiers wer wont to be raunsomed according to the place they served in. Yf yow may come to speake w<sup>th</sup> my L. I hoope he will take the best order for my delyvery out of this mysery, and I hope that her maiesty will not be vnwilling to further the cause of a poore man every waye vnable to helpe himself. Good Brother recommend me to yo<sup>r</sup> self and the rest of my frendes, thoughe they be but fewe, and small, and I doubt not but that the God of Heaven will be mercyfull to me in whom is my only truste and that he will graunt vs a happy meeting, the sooner the better, till when I refere all other dyscorses. ffrom the castle of Lyshborne this ix<sup>th</sup> of ffebruary [1592.]

Your loving Brother and now a poore prysoner,

PH. GAVDY.

Captayne Mounson<sup>2</sup> recommendeth himself to you.

---

<sup>1</sup> Lord Thomas Howard.

<sup>2</sup> William Monson, the writer of the "Naval Tracts" was the third son of Sir John Monson of South Carlton in Lincolnshire. He went to sea at the age of sixteen and served against the Armada. In 1591 he commanded the "Garland" in the Earl of

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 17.)

MY SWEETE AND BEST BELOVED BROTHER,

I have now passed my longe and wearysome trobles, and by the helpe of good frendes I am now returned into myne owne contrye. I muche wonder I never hard of yow. I know your forwardnes well enoughe but in all cartes ther is one thiller. I am now with all speede going to the courte. I have bene with my l[ord] of Canterbury<sup>1</sup> and with my L[ord] Keeper<sup>2</sup> who have vsed me wonderfull kyndly, and wrytten in my behalf to her Ma<sup>tye</sup>. I will dyspach as sone as I maye, and with all speede come into the contrye wher it is now tyme to receyve some rentes. Sweete brother I doubte not but that yow will be willinge enoughe to helpe me. I thanke god I brought over bothe good clothes and mony in my purse. Thoughe nowe my lyving hathe bene so ill vsed as my selfe, I have learned a language will do me little good in Norfolk and yet I meane not to sell it. Wryte vpp by theise carryers by any meanes that I may heare from yow, recommend me to my syster, to my very good oncle Anthony, S<sup>r</sup> Nich<sup>s</sup> Bacon, my lady Bacon and my L. Drury, honest Nathaniel Bacon, Will Calthorpe. In poste haste. This present Michelmas daye. I cam late yesternight to London [1592 ?]

Your ever loving Brother to the last breathe,

PH. GAWDY.

---

Cumberland's expedition to Spain, and being left in charge of a Dutch ship with a Portuguese cargo, he was captured by the Spaniards and was detained prisoner for two years, part of the time in Lisbon Castle, where he evidently fell in with Gawdy. In 1596 he was knighted by the Earl of Essex, and died in 1643.

<sup>1</sup> John Whitgift, Archbishop of Canterbury.

<sup>2</sup> Sir John Puckering was made Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, 28 April, 1592, in place of Sir Christopher Hatton, who died 20 November, 1591.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 84.)

SWEETE BROTHER,

I receyved those letters that wer written by your best beloved secretary, and I assuer [you] I do take them at her hands not a little kyndly And besydes her kynde manner of wryting I find that her wholsome and good counsayle concluding with a specyall good wishing and loving affection towards me. Let her know that I will requitt her good will to the very vttermost, and though she hathe lately gotten a smacke of the lattin tounge, yet I thinke I haue more Spanishe then she, though I can not excuse her of writing fals orthogrophie, but I will answer her in spanishe that I will remayne at her commauude, *pour la vida*. But now to the purpose of myne owne busines. I have a promyse bothe of the man, and of the rome, but I was commaunded that I shold wayte heare this Christmas. But assuer yourself (as God lyveth) I will not lyve from yow this Christmas, but rather returne after the tyme ffor I doubt not but that I will dyspache all thinges according to my mynde. By the next carryars I will send downe my trunke and all my things and yours, and without all fayle by the power of God I will be at your house at Harling that weeke before saterdaye vppon Christmas, for I do presuppose that vppon that very day yow will take your journey towards Crowsehall, and buylde vppon my creditt I will be with yow before that day to attend, and wayte vppon yow thether. What I can do for my self at the courte in the meane tyme I will do even to the vttermost with all my power. The next Thursday certeynly shall my things be sent downe, and I will take my iorney to be with yow before the tyme apoynted, If God will and he gyveth me lyfe and this sett downe as a just account. I pray wryte vpp but two or three lynes only that yow do well, and yf yow have apoynted your journey just in that order to S<sup>r</sup> Charles or otherwyse. I will not breake my determinacion could yow apoynt it otherwyse. Ther shall be no fault in me but that

M<sup>r</sup> Lounde shall do as muche. Touching all suche newes as is at the court I will wryte superficially therof. The Duke of Parma<sup>1</sup> for certeynty is deade confirmed to be true poysoned and dyed as he satt at dinner. The Conde de foyntes<sup>2</sup> is governor in his place, he that was governor in Lyshborne when I was ther, and the man that committed me to all my miserys. Uppon the coronation day at nyght ther cam two Knightes armed vpp into the pryvy chamber. Videlicet my L. of Essex<sup>3</sup> and my L. of Cumberland<sup>4</sup> and ther made a challenge that vppon the xxvj<sup>th</sup> of ffebruary next that they will runn w<sup>th</sup> all commers to mayntayne that ther M. is most worthyest and most fayrest Amadis de Gaule.<sup>5</sup> Her Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath not come muche abroade neither to chappell nor elswher by reason of a runne she hath gotten in one of her cheekes, in an other body no great matter, but muche in great princes. Ther is a very fyne gentlewoman very fayre, and a great riche mariage of the pryvy chamber latly w<sup>th</sup>in this fortnight. My L. Shandowes daughter<sup>6</sup> she is much dyed and poynted at in the place she lyveth in. Munn Bacon was at the court and extolleth my L. Mary Ver above all the rest. But in seacreat I will tell yow (vnles yow know better therof then myself) that he is towardes maryage and in great good lyking with a kinswoman of yo<sup>rs</sup> and mine S<sup>r</sup> Edward Wottons daughter.<sup>7</sup> I pray God it may go forward. The plage is very littell or nothing at London, and all Londiners have leave to come agayne to the courte. Ther is muche stirr and con-

<sup>1</sup> Alexander Farnese, Duke of Parma, Governor of the Netherlands. He died the 2nd of December, 1592, in consequence of a wound received before Rouen.

<sup>2</sup> Don Pedro de Toledo, Count of Fuentes, a Spanish general. He did not become Governor of the Netherlands. He died in 1643.

<sup>3</sup> Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, the Queen's favourite, executed in 1601.

<sup>4</sup> George Clifford, Earl of Cumberland, died 1605.

<sup>5</sup> The hero of the well-known Spanish romance so-called.

<sup>6</sup> Giles Brydges, Baron Chandos of Sudeley, who died in 1593-4, had two daughters: (1) Elizabeth, aged 16 at her father's death. Her fortune was £16,500. She was "the fair Mrs. Brydges" to whom the Earl of Essex was so attentive as to offend Queen Elizabeth. She married Sir John Kennedy in 1603. (2) Catherine, aged 18 at her father's death. She married in 1608-9 Francis, 4th Earl of Bedford.

<sup>7</sup> Sir Edmund Bacon of Redgrave, 2nd Baronet, married Philippa, daughter and co-heir of Sir Edward Wotton, created Baron Wotton in 1603. Sir E. Bacon died 1649.

tention about the carike<sup>1</sup> goodes whilst some sweare that they be loosers therby. And my L. Treasurer will take order that all will come into her Ma<sup>ties</sup> hand and S<sup>r</sup> Walter Rawleyes who still continueth in dysgrace.<sup>2</sup> S<sup>r</sup> frances Drake is at the court and all the speache ther that he goeth very shortly to the sea. My L. Thomas is now ther, but he stayed but two dayes and S<sup>r</sup> Martin furbisher. But S<sup>r</sup> ffraunces Drake caryethe it away from them all. My L. is somewhat out of countenance and S<sup>r</sup> Martin Furb: in reasonable good favor Sweet Brother I have heare sent the downe a brace of warrantes of my L. Chamberlain, yf he had not had so many vnreasonable sutors for them I had sent you more by my L. Dygby had got some longe before. I was very sorry that Frammingam was gone. I will get yow another yf I can but speake w<sup>th</sup> my L. of Sussex. Sweet Brother, I have gott yow the impost for a tun of wyne, and yf M<sup>r</sup> Skinner had bene at home I had now sent it, for it is ready sined by my L. and yow shall have it in the next letter or by myne owne hands that weeke, and whatsoever I do, or can do to do yow any faythfull service, I fynde great contentment therin, and so yow shall ever fynd of me. M<sup>r</sup> Warren<sup>4</sup> vseth you and me both lyke him selfe very skurvyly. He receyveth the mony long synce and I can yet get no acquittance from his owne hand. I thinke his shrevalty hath extolled him to Lucyfers rome . . . Sweet Brother have some great care of my horses that I may ryde of them gallantly to S<sup>r</sup> Charles. If I have now forgott to wryte of any thinge, I will remember it when I come my selfe, etc.

This viij<sup>th</sup> of December [1592.]

---

<sup>1</sup> A large Portuguese carrack, the "Madre de Dios," had been captured in August by an expedition under Sir Martin Frobiser. It had a very rich cargo, much of which had disappeared before the vessel was brought to England. That part of it which arrived in England, consisting of pepper, spices, silks, etc., was valued at £141,200, the whole of which the Queen was at first inclined to claim, but contented herself with a share. See *Tracts of Sir William Monson*, edited by M. Oppenheim, i. pp. 292-296.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Walter Raleigh had incurred the Queen's displeasure on account of his preferring the charms of Elizabeth Throckmorton to those of his sovereign.

<sup>3</sup> Richard Warren, Sheriff of Essex, 1591-2.



## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 93.)

MY SWEETEST AND BEST BELOVED BROTHER,

I have receyved your most kynde lettres whiche worke more effects in me then thowsandes of golde and sylver. And but that I dare not flatter I wolde saye to thee as Jakob sayde to Esaue, that thy presence seamethe to me as the presence of an angell.<sup>1</sup> Sweete brother I love youe truly, thoughe I love not my selfe. I will betraye my selfe tenn thousande tyme, but your sweet selfe never. I knowe I have myscarried many wayes, yet I hope by Gods grace to make amendes once for all, it is never to late to do well. I will saye withe David, *Delicta iuventutis ne reminiscaris domine.*<sup>2</sup> I protest before the knower of all secretes my worldly ioyes consistethe in yowre selfe only, heavenly matters exceede all others. In fewe woordes I will be withe your best selfe ij or iij dayes before the tyme howsoever. And beleve me I ioye not a little to heare of your best credit. I must go to the courte tomorrowe with out fayle. I attende vppon a mourning saynte. I wolde gladly clothe her all in grene. Your sturgen of the best kynd I colde not sende downe by theis carryers. It shall be at Thetforde next sonday without fayle the daye you meete the judges. I knowe it will serve the turne very well. I can not wryte muche newes, I will bringe all downe withe me. Benitt the quenes footeman is committed to the tower. He hathe confessed upon his examination that he hathe bene acquaynted withe many treasons this seaven yeare. I do not forgett you to my L. of Sussex. I say no more. Commende me to my best beloved syster, my good oncle Anthony and all the rest of my frendes, with my two sweete cosyns.

From London this xxii<sup>th</sup> of February [? 1593].

Your ever while deathe,

PHILIP GAVDY.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Genesis 33, 10.<sup>2</sup> Psalm 25, 7.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 97.)

MY GOOD BROTHER,

I wrytt a letter yesterday by yo<sup>r</sup> man Graye, and I told him that I wold send an other this morning by the carryars. I was yesterdaye w<sup>th</sup> my oncle at the Serieantes feaste, and before then he knewe not but that my syster was deade, and seamed to be very glad of her wellfare, and amendmente. Ther was at the feast my L. Keeper, and my L. of Bukhurst and S<sup>r</sup> Jhon ffoscue,<sup>1</sup> and first I shold haue sayde my L. of Canterbury of the counsaile, my L. of Rutland, my L. of Bedford, my L. Stafford, my L. Shandowes [Chandos], my L. Northe w<sup>th</sup> suche a multitude of Knightes and gentlemen, Ladyes and gentlewomen innumerable. Seriant Danyell<sup>2</sup> was ancient of the call, ther were nyne besydes, a very great feast. I can send very little other newes more then that I wrytt of yesterday. Only this the Quenes Ma<sup>tie</sup> is going a progresse first she commeth to Lambethe, from thence she gothe to Wimbleton, from thence to S<sup>r</sup> Jhon ffoscues by Hampsted, from thence to Hygate M<sup>r</sup> Corwallis his house, from thence to Tebolds, and some saye further towards Cambridge. I forgott to wryte to yow that ther be no Knights of the garter new chosen as yet but ther wer fower nominated whiche wer these. My L. of Southampton, my L. Keeper, my L. Thomas and my L. Willoubye of ersby, but it tooke no effecte. I can say no more at this present but that I wold be glad to heare from you by wryting as sone as your best leysure servethe. I was withe my Lady Frammingham at her departure out of towne towards Cambridge. I am glad of the recoverye of your good wyfe my syster. I forgott my comendacions yesterday to my Sweete cosins. In amendment therfore commende me a myllion of tymes to them, God blesse them. Recommend me often to your best self, my good oncle Anthonye, my syster when you see her, my Lady Frammingham and all the rest of our frendes. In haste this iij<sup>th</sup> of May [1593].

---

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Fortescue, Chancellor of the Exchequer.

<sup>2</sup> William Daniell, Serjeant-at-law, and in 1604 Judge of the Common Pleas.

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 86.)

MY GOOD BROTHER,

After the writing of my last letter by Valyant Immediately w<sup>th</sup> in one houre ther comes a pursivaunte to me w<sup>th</sup> a letter from the whole bodye of the counsayle, I being ready to wayte of my L. Treasurer aboute the prysoner heare in Englande so that presently I made my repayre before them sytting at my L. Treasurers. When I cam before them ther I vnderstood that one M<sup>r</sup> Harbroun<sup>1</sup> (who was Ambassador to turkeye) in the behalf of Lucas Phelip, Henricos master, the marchante that remayned bownde for me at Lyshborne, by reason of some late lettres he receyved from him putes vp to the counsayle one supplication in the behest of Lewcas Phelip, how that he cam bownde for me either to returne suche a prysoner named Mathias de Frias or els so mutche money, neither of whiche was as yet by me performed in w<sup>che</sup> respecte the tyme of nine monthes being expired, he was imprysoned, and enforced to answer the moneye, besydes M<sup>r</sup> Harbroun puts vp an other supplication in the behalf of the men that remayne in the Portingall gallyes w<sup>th</sup> all ther names to a letter to the number of xxxvij<sup>te</sup> that by reason I had not returned this man or the monye they all remayned prysoners still in the gallyes, and that vppon my sending ouer, I shold haue sent to this Dutche merchant Lewcas Phelip my L. Admyrall his passe, for his and ther safe arryuall heare in Englande, w<sup>ch</sup> passe I procured and haue gotten two monthes synce, and shall be sent vppon my dyspache of Henrico. I was demaunded by the whole body of the counsayle why I neither had dyspached the one or the other. I answered that I vndertoke to ransome one Mathias de Frias being in S<sup>r</sup> Walter Rawleyes custodye, who valewed his prysoner at fyve hundred ponde, and my estate was farr unable to redeeme him, then they answered me y<sup>t</sup> vppon the paymente of two hundred ponde I was dyscharged, and told me that I had fownde extra-

<sup>1</sup> William Harborne.

ordinary frendship, and good vsage, that none els had fownde, and yet all others had dyscharged ther ransome that were prysoners besydes. I answered that I was a yonger brother, my estate but meane, neuerthelesse I wold performe in this case to the vttermoste of my power. Whervppon the whole counsaile vsed me very honorably and in all good manner, and sayd that they wold all do me as muche pleasure as they might, and sent one with me to S<sup>r</sup> Walter Rawley to know how he wold deale with his prysoner, and what charges he had bene at w<sup>th</sup> him, then he sent a note how he had bene prysoner w<sup>th</sup> hime ever synce the spanishe armado was vppon our seas w<sup>ch</sup> is fyve yeares paste. He sett downe for his dyett twenty pounce a yeare, for his apparrell tenn pounce a yeare, w<sup>ch</sup> amounteth to a hundred and fifty pounce, besydes the ransome and valewe of his bodye, and his keepers ffees. Vppon returne hereof my L. Treasurer told me that it was farr the better corse to paye the monye and afterwarde to make some suite to her ma<sup>tie</sup> for recompence, w<sup>ch</sup> he of his honor told me that he wold do all that in him laye to further, and besydes he told me that neither her ma<sup>tie</sup>, or els the whole body of the counsaile cold pleasure me any whitt at all in this. Whervppon good consideracon I promysed to them that w<sup>th</sup> in seuen dayes I wold discharghe it althoughe it wer to the vtter vndoing of my whole estate, hoping hereafter of ther honorable ayde, when I shold haue occasion to vse them, w<sup>ch</sup> they all faythfully promysed, and in especyall my L. Treasurer vppon whom my cheife hope dependeth, so I was vppon very good termes dysmyssed. I wente presently to Dauid le mer Lewcas Phelip factor here in England, who only in respecte that he desyreth to pleasure me is contente to take your bande for the mony to be payde a yeare hence, w<sup>ch</sup> shall be in all just two hundred pounce, for the other twenty pounce w<sup>ch</sup> shold be for the interest I haue agreed w<sup>th</sup> him to satisfy him, bycause I wolde not drawe you into the greater bandes. Good brother touching the paymente by yeares ther is no speache to be vsed therof, and yet you well knowe your offer was to paye one hundred pounce w<sup>th</sup> in a year. Assuer y<sup>r</sup> self brother I hope by godes grace to dyscharge it w<sup>th</sup> out any

trouble to you in the worlde: touching what parte I shall beare I will do as muche as you will require. This Ducheman Daud le mer presently vppon my dyscharge of this matter will gyve me a suite to preferr, w<sup>ch</sup> shall seame very light, and yet be of reasonable good valewe, and assuer yo<sup>r</sup> self brother it shall not be pardely followed, and vppon the dyscharge herof, I shall have moste iuste cause, as I shall be well instructed therin. Daud le mer hathe heare sent a Duchman a skryvener, whom I spake w<sup>th</sup> all last night, this man is but only a messinger and sent in the behalf of Daud le mer and assure your self brother that yow never had dealinges w<sup>th</sup> an honest man then this Daud le mer, ffor at the yeares ende you maye commaunde him in any reasonable manner. Good brother dyspache the messynger w<sup>th</sup> all the speede that yow maye, for vppon his returne I haue band of Daud le Mer to haue my dyscharge, w<sup>ch</sup> I must gyve to y<sup>e</sup> counsayle, and assuer yower self it will fall out mightely for bothe our credittes, and I hope to neither of o<sup>r</sup> hynderances, and ther is no delaye to be vsed, this messinger is to make a bande for the payment of two hundred pounce, juste a twellmonthe hence w<sup>th</sup> out any Interest, for I have taken ordre w<sup>th</sup> the other for the same, and good brother while I lyve I will neuer trouble you in any suche cause. Vppon the present returne of this messynger I meane not to sturr from the courte till I heare of some good for my self, and forth withe to repayre into the contrye to lyve w<sup>th</sup> yow, wher it is my only desier to be. I can say no more, I haue talked w<sup>th</sup> you heartofore suffycyently of this busines. I knowe yow ar wyse enoughe to consider therof. I must confesse I founde yow extraordinaryly kynde to me at my departure, and yf god spare me lyfe it shall be requitted, and brother beleue me as I shall answer before the allmighty I have travelled in this matter as muche as I maye, but ther is no other corse to be taken nor this to be altered, and whilst I remayne in ther honors good favors, and pinion better to do it then hereafter to be enforced, and then I may seeke a just recompence vppon good cause. *Verbum sapienti sat est*: and assuer yo<sup>r</sup> self by gods grace I will performe my busines to very good purpose w<sup>th</sup> out any delaye, neither will I forget yow in what

I may stand yow in my steade, or do yow any service. I hope this suffysethe if I have not bene to tedious. Ther is no good newes but some such as it is. M<sup>r</sup> Pendry<sup>1</sup> is executed for writing of Martin Marprelate. I do not mucche reioyce therin. Recommende me often to my good syster, etc.

ffrom London this firste of Maye [? June, 1593]. And this matter being dyspatched I shall reape mucche credit therby, and I hope no losse.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 119.)

SWEETE BROTHER,

I returne many kynde thankes proceding from a gratefull and true harte for those manyfolde fauors I haue receyved at your handes. I haue discharged all thinges therunto belonging. I haue not delt vnkyndely with Henrico who is now gone over. I haue delt honestly and faythfullye with yow euery waye. I haue remembered yow to my L. keeper. S<sup>r</sup> Nicho[las] Bacon will beare me witnesse for we dined ther one daye to gether, and S<sup>r</sup> Drue Drury.<sup>2</sup> He can testyfy that I spake with my L. I mett Sir Nicholas at Ware. My oncle Anthony and I went together to the mariage of Munn Bacon. My oncle was mucche deceyved touching the receyving of his trunke. I haue bene once allready at the courte and haue made some waye. I meane incontinently to make my repayre thether. The queenes ma<sup>tie</sup> this daye removeth to Otlandes, by reason one of Lo. Lumlye's maides dyed of the plage falling sycke there, but removed before her deathe. I will not forgett myne owne busines to do yow all wayes any faythfull service, by

<sup>1</sup> John Penry, the chief author of the Martin Mar-Prelate tracts. He was charged with having "feloniously devised and written certain words with intent to excite rebellion and insurrection in England." He was hanged at St. Thomas at Watering, Surrey, 29 May, 1593. (*National Biography*.)

<sup>2</sup> Sir D. Drury, Gentleman Usher of the Privy Chamber to Queen Elizabeth, died 1617.

God's grace I will see you er it be long. Geteenbargen<sup>1</sup> is yelded vp to Count Morris vppon ffrydaye last. Some speach is that my L. Willoughby should go into france. The plage encreaseth; this last weeke dyed foure skore and eleven, syx more then before. Commende me often to my very good syster, my sweete cosins, Will Callthorpe and lastly to your good selfe. This xxijth of Julie [1593 ?].

---

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, p. 88.)

Mr Shreife<sup>2</sup> and my best beloved brother, I have receyved a letter or two from my wellbeloved syster to my great content and lyking. Palgraue came to me the very next morning after my comminge from the court wher I remayned some fower or fyve dayes vppon some specyall busines. And in that respecte I will wryte the very present newes that the place affordethe. Ther is a parlament called in ffraunce wher ambassadors of all Christendome will be, S<sup>r</sup> Robert Sydney is for England.<sup>3</sup> Ther is newes newly come to the courte that ther are fyue thousand spanyards embarked at Farolle [Ferrol] for Brytayne.<sup>4</sup> The Quens ma<sup>tie</sup> her self satt in counsayle uppon Tuesdaye last in my L. Chamberlins chamber about theise and some other specyall affayres. The rest that satt was my L. Essex, my L. Admyrall, my L. of Buchurst, S<sup>r</sup> Robert Cecill, S<sup>r</sup> Jhon foscue, and D<sup>r</sup> Jhon Wolley. Ther wer no other for My L. Tresorer is still at Tebolds. My L.

<sup>1</sup> If Gertruydenberg is meant, that garrison capitulated to Prince Maurice 24 June, 1593.

<sup>2</sup> Bassingbourne Gawdye was Sheriff of Norfolk from November, 1593, to November, 1594.

<sup>3</sup> Sir Robert Sidney, Governor of Flushing, was sent on a special mission in November, 1593, to Henry IV. of France, to plead the cause of the French Protestants. He was created Earl of Leicester in 1618, and died in 1626.

<sup>4</sup> Sir Thomas Leighton writes to Lord Burghley, 21 December, 1593: "The 19th of this present, I received advertisement from St. Malo and from a person of good account that there is now lately arrived at Blavet in Brittany about 5 or 6,000 Spaniards." Hatfield MSS., part iv.

Keeper went home vppon Monday. My L. Chamberline hathe gott the gowte in one of his toes, he vsed me well, and you very kyndly. S<sup>r</sup> Arthur Hinningham gaue him a very big flying tassell, and was the most importunate sutor to be shreife that euer was, and my L. told me as much, and euery page of the courte can tell therof, for yo<sup>r</sup> good self I speake it w<sup>th</sup>out compasse of flattery I know not how any man can matche yow in generall credit, and no [one] suspecteth that euer ther was any labor in yo<sup>r</sup> behalf, yf any will say to the contrary in the contry I will avowe that he lyes in his throte and will justifie it wher he dares. And therof enoughe. All other thinges I will tell yow at my comming. Yow ar beholding to my L. Admyrall and my L. Chamberline and yow shall hold them for they be worthy therof. Kelly is delyuered out of pryson and restored to his former estate, and maketh gold as fast as a henn will cracke nuttes. John Darcy<sup>1</sup> w<sup>th</sup> the moll in his face is dead of the plague, and a brother of his had a plague sore. S<sup>r</sup> Rowland Heyward<sup>2</sup> is newly dead, and hath left a very sweet wydowe, but yet somewhat grene. My Brother Darcy<sup>3</sup> at Tolson is deade and hathe left his wyfe fower hundred pounce a year, and muche wealthe besydes, the land to dyscend to his fyue daughters. I will not tell you how I speede in my concealed busines till I come myself but I will be seacreat, and by god's grace all shall be well, and for my good, but I will be sylent awhile, and yet I sleepe not therin. I am going to morrow to the Courte, and if I lyve I will hasten to your sweet self. Commend me to my very good oncle Anthony Gavdy, to my best syster, Mr. Lounde, And my cosin Collthorpe but above all to your

<sup>1</sup> Probably son of Thomas, 2nd Lord Darcy, of Chiche. (Davy's Suffolk Collection, British Museum, *s.v.* Darcy.)

<sup>2</sup> Lord Mayor of London in 1570. In the *Calendar of State Papers, Domestic*, 1591-1594, are two letters from the Commissioners of the Office of Earl Marshal to his widow as to the arms to be used at his funeral, 16, 23 December, 1593.

<sup>3</sup> Thomas Darcy of Tolleshunt Darcy, co. Essex, died 14 November, 1593. The relationship is as follows. Philip's father, on the death of his wife Anne Bassingbourne, must (though it is nowhere recorded, there being a gap in the Tolleshunt Darcy marriage registers) have married for a second wife Margaret, widow of Thomas Darcy, sen., of Tolleshunt Darcy. She had by the latter two sons, Thomas here mentioned, Eustace, and five daughters, to whom Philip frequently refers as his "sisters."



bestbeloved self, my two sweet cosyns whom I pray God blesse, not forgetting to be thankfull for the least cortesy that ever I receyved at your handes. In haste.

ffrom my lodging at my L of Shrewsburys howse. [Dec. 1593.] I have sent you the bill of the plage.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 90.)

MR. SHREIFE AND MY BEST BELOVED BROTHER,

I have not slepte or bene any whit ydle in performing that busines I was sent in Court withall. And briefly I meane to descrybe the manner thereof for tyme alloweth me no larger dyscorse. I have boughte the a sadle w<sup>th</sup> the furniture coryspondente no other then my L. of Essex, S<sup>r</sup> Charles Blunt, S<sup>r</sup> Roger Williams and suche other cavilleros at this hower do vse. The footclothe bought of a clothe dyed out of a blewe blankett, w<sup>ch</sup> neuer will change coller for any weather garded not after the old fashion but the newest in request and most profitable, for lace therwith is alderman lyke and suche as will hange vppon euery taynter,<sup>1</sup> thy hose I haue bought of the mallard coller. It will holde well a perfecte wynter coller, paved and rowled just according to the fashion. I will not saye that very greate men I tooke the pattern from them. I have sent yow a hatt, only ther wanteth a hattband w<sup>ch</sup> I had not to my lyking at the tyme that the thinges were packed vpp, but it shall comme with my self and that shall be shortly. I haue sent my well beloued syster all suche thinges as she requested, her fann with the handle not stale any kynde of waye, a payre of knyues, a fuardingall<sup>2</sup> of the best fashion, her gold thread, her heare call,<sup>3</sup> her pumpes, and to be short ther wanteth nothing she spake for but only a thing I shold haue had of M<sup>r</sup> Munioye, and he fayled me very wrongfully according to his

<sup>1</sup> ? Tincture.

<sup>2</sup> Farthingale.

<sup>3</sup> A net for the hair.

promyse, but it is comming and that shall be all one. I praye tell my good syster that I expected to have hard from her, and to have receyved a letter to the lyke purpose, but I accepte all well by reason of my stronge beleife and while I lyve I will love her, and honor her with a true harte. I have sent my heyre and Charles<sup>1</sup> two daggers and yet he forbiddes me to kysse his Kate. I was one day at the corte when I cold not staye longe by reason of my busines. I was talked withall by some ladyes of the pryuy chamber and by many others how thyne owne credit made the shreife, and my L. Keepers<sup>2</sup> ayde, and her Ma<sup>ties</sup> specyall owne lyking and commendacion. Beleieve not thy vndershreif to muche in all thinges for I can tell him that he wolde haue delte for others as well as for the, and his speaches did the rather a penworthe of hurte then a hallpworthe of good. My L. of Essex told me of yow and how yow wer Shreife but not a worde of his letter. S<sup>r</sup> Arthur Henningham made great suit to preferr himself, afterwardes Phillip Woodhouse<sup>3</sup> and M<sup>r</sup> Knyvett before the, and in the end cold not preuayle in that thy credit was better then all thers, and so turned talke of thy syde, all w<sup>ch</sup> thinges layde together makes me record Virg[i]ll his old verses. *Hos ego Versiculos feci tulit alter honores, Sic vos*, etc. I am going this night to the Corte w<sup>th</sup> Tom Fermar who is now a buiing in Southwarke a carste of tasselles; he wantethe nothing but a good cyterne to his voyce. I spake not yet w<sup>th</sup> the Quene, but by God's grace I meane to do. My L. Treasurer<sup>4</sup> to the comforte of all them that serve him and gayne by him is perfectly recouered, he hathe bene at his corte at Tebolds<sup>5</sup> this sennight. Great speaches about chosing the King of ffraunce of the order of the Garter.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> His nephews Framlingham and Charles.

<sup>2</sup> Sir John Puckering, died 1596.

<sup>3</sup> Knighted by the Earl of Essex at the capture of Cadiz, created a baronet 1611, ancestor of the Earl of Kimberley.

<sup>4</sup> Lord Burghley.

<sup>5</sup> Theobalds, in co. Hertford. James I exchanged Hatfield House for it when it became a royal palace. It was dismantled by order of Parliament in 1650.

<sup>6</sup> Henri IV. did not receive the Order of the Garter till October, 1596, the Earl of Shrewsbury being sent on a special embassy for that purpose.

My L. of Essex was this daye in London. I have been twyse with the party I told you of, the party is very sycke, and therewithall kynd enough. I say no more, I leave the rest, All myne owne busines will be dyspached betwixt this and Fryday next when by Gods grace I will make towards thy good house. And this next Fryday I will sende the some specyall remembrance. I have provyded my self of some necessaryes to attende and wayte of her to do the creditt. I only want a veluett cloke of the best fashion. I desyer nothing els in thy shreifalty. Sweet brother send me that by theise carryars that thou didst promyse me to buy me that cloke for I shall haue more then a want therof. What meanes soever thou usest send it vpp this next tyme, and I will leave it to make to be sent downe with all possyble speade after, for I will presently come away, I will deserve it. I haue not yet spoken w<sup>th</sup> my L. Cheif Justice,<sup>1</sup> or Judge ffenner,<sup>2</sup> they lye neither in towne, but I will w<sup>th</sup> earnest sute touching the assyses.

Commende me most hartely, etc., this vij<sup>th</sup> of December [1593].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 92.)

GOOD BROTHER,

My L. Drury laye heare this last night, and I was bownde to attend vppon her, vnlesse I shold haue Incurred mighty dyscortesy. I praye be to night at Thetford, my will was to haue bene w<sup>th</sup> yow this morning, but my L. keepes me. Heare is no newes but that my L. Kytson<sup>3</sup> is well recouered, and in token of thankesgyuing danced all this last night as long as she was able

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Popham, Lord Chief Justice of the Queen's Bench, created 1592. He died 10 June, 1607. The last State trials he presided over were those against the conspirators in the Gunpowder Plot.

<sup>2</sup> Edward Fenner, created Judge of the Court of Queen's Bench in 1590. He died 23 January, 1611-2.

<sup>3</sup> Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Thomas Cornwallis, 2nd wife of Sir Thomas Kitson, the younger. She died in 1628, surviving her husband.

to go. My L. of Essex is at Royston. I pray once agayne come to night to Thetford. And so I leaue you to God, recommending myself to my uncle Anthony my twoe young cosins, and lastly to y<sup>or</sup> good self. Henghame.<sup>1</sup>

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2004, f. 95b.)

GOOD BROTHER,

According to the tyme we haue sent downe some parte of your thinges, I hope they will fall owt to your good lyking, the rest ar all in hand so that your man can not come till next weeke nor the thinges neither. Your Jerkin shall be very fayre and good as any man weareth. All the rest shall not myslyke I hope, but yf any thinge be amysse or nott altogether answerable to your sweetest humore blame not mee but Judas that carryeth the bagg. For in many thinges he controllethe my Judgmente and claymeth a later direction then I had. But sweet brother assuer your self while I lyve I will do the all faythefull and true service bothe in this, and in whatsoever els. When your man cam I was at the courte. Those thinges I gave to my L. Chamberline, and my L. Admyrall wer very hyly well taken, and they wer the first they had yet to yeaere. I had many thankes and many kynde promyses. I will follow the benyfytt therof as God shall gyve me grace. I do not forgett my self in an other busines besydes which you shall heare more of heareafter.

I was with my L. Cheife Justice vppon my first comming to towne, and then he knew not the iust tyme of the assyses w<sup>ch</sup> now is apoynted vppon mondaye come three weekes, and he gyues yow wonderfull good wordes, and only for yo<sup>r</sup> sake he sayth agaynst his will the assyses be at Thetforde, but neuer heareafter shall. S<sup>r</sup> ffraunces Ver<sup>2</sup> is going ouer and shall haue a regiment of three

<sup>1</sup> Contemporary endorsement "1593."

<sup>2</sup> Sir F. Vere was returning into the Netherlands, after one of his numerous journeys to England for raising additional troops,

thousand half the Quens paye, and half the states. Docter Lopus<sup>1</sup> hathe bene often examyned and dyuers tymes vppon the racke, he confesseth all things very franckly. Besydes there be two or three Irishe men committed to the touer about very and capitall treason. S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Bacon is still in towne. S<sup>r</sup> William Woodhouse, S<sup>r</sup> Robert Danby, and he and I supped together the last night, and S<sup>r</sup> Will. Woodhouse promised to deliuer my commendations to yow. I pray recomende me often to my good Syster, etc. This present fryday morning [Feb. 1594].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 99.)

MY GOOD BROTHER,

By chaunce late I mett with Graye, by whom I was exceeding glad to heare of your good wellfare, besydes I was resolued of that which I, and many others stood in doubte of, for I assuer yow in the reputation of the world my syster was deade, and a generall report from all men's mouthes. I thanke God it provethe fals. And in truthe I had written by the carryars, but that I heard yow wer at Cambridge with her vppon that extremyty. My oncle Justice<sup>2</sup> him self told me of it with whom I haue bene more then once, and from his owne mouthe I heard that my L. Cheife Justice hathe gyven yow specyall commendacion more then to any other now in your shreualty. I will not say that many others do so, for generally I heare all men speake that of yow which pleaseth me mightely well, God continew it to his good will and pleasure. Uppon Snt. Georges day I was at court wher ther was a great presse of people. Very fewe Knightes of the garter. The Q. Ma<sup>tie</sup> went [in] processyon. And my L. Treasurer, And M<sup>r</sup> Treasurer went not by reeson ther legges serued not them very well. I dined that

<sup>1</sup> Roderigo Lopez, Queen's Physician, accused of complicity in a plot to kill the Queen, was found guilty, and sentenced and executed 7 June, 1594.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Francis Gawdy, Puisne Judge of Queen's Bench, afterwards Lord Chief Justice of Common Pleas.

day and supped at M<sup>r</sup> Treasurers who had his dyett vpp into his chamber. My L. of Essex was very well manned, and a great multitude of them. The Queen is very angry w<sup>th</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Anth. Shirley<sup>1</sup> and S<sup>r</sup> Nich. Clyfford for taking the order of Snt. Michill, and hathe commaunded that they shall send the order backe agayne, first bycause they tooke it w<sup>th</sup>out her pryuyty next bycause they toke the whole othe, and one part therof is to defende the masse while they lyue, w<sup>ch</sup> my L. of Lester and the Duke<sup>2</sup> were dyspensd withall when they toke it. M<sup>r</sup> Conesby<sup>3</sup> that keepe the that offyce touching the commission of the Subsidy telleth me absolutly that no Shreife can be in that commyssion for ther is one clause in the Statute, that the Shreife must be ready euer to ayde the commyssioners. And for that cause my Cosin and diuers others wer put out last yeare, yet yow shall se I will do what may be, and for my L. of Sussex I haue not yet done that busines by reason I sawe him not at courte, and he tooke phisicke some two or three dayes, but I meane to wayte vppon him tomorrowe, when you shall not be forgotten. Muche lamentation for the deathe of my L. of Darby,<sup>4</sup> and some speaches that he shold be poysened. My Lady synce hath bene delyuered of a sonne, but It was vntymely and put her in great daunger. The yonge erle his brother is now at London w<sup>th</sup> whom I haue bene, an olde acquayntance of myne. Ther is very freshe newes from my L. of Essex his mouthe that ther shold presently go tenn thowsand for brytayne. This day is the great feast of the serjeantes. I am apoynted to go thither w<sup>th</sup> my oncle. My L.

<sup>1</sup> Sir Anthony Shirley in 1591 joined the Earl of Essex in his expedition to Normandy in support of Henry of Navarre, who conferred on him for his services the order of St. Michael. On his return he was imprisoned in the Fleet in company with Sir Nicholas Clifford, but was released on retiring from the order.

<sup>2</sup> Lord Leicester and Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk, were created by the French King, Charles IX., knights of St. Michael in January, 1565-6

<sup>3</sup> Perhaps Ralph Coningsby of North Mimms, sheriff for co. Herts in 1596, and afterwards knighted.

<sup>4</sup> Ferdinando Stanley, better known as Lord Strange, patron of the actor's company known as "Lord Strange's Company," succeeded his father as Earl of Derby in September, 1593, but died in the following April. His wife was Alice, daughter of Sir John Spencer of Althorpe.

Frammingam tooke the newes of my syster very heauyly but now she is well pleased. In truthe I thanke god she is as well as I sawe her this seven yeare. Assuer yo<sup>r</sup>self doctor Atslo<sup>1</sup> hath done a great cure of her, and is neuly deade himselfe. I haue vysyted her as often as I conveyently cold. Graye maketh haste or els I wold be more tedious. Recommende me often to your good self, and to my good oncle Anthony, with whom I am in conceyte, and will be in person shortly by the power of God to do yow my loving and faythfull servyce. I pray let me be remembered to S<sup>r</sup> Nicho. Bacon and my Lady, and my L. Drury, my Cosin Phill. and all the rest.

ffrom London this ij of Maye [1594].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 113.)

SWEETE BROTHER,

I apoynted with my self to haue bene at home this night at the furthest, but synce my comming into this contrye agaynst my will my frendes haue entreated my company in suche importunate manner as I cold not with any reason satysfye them otherwyse then with staying. I haue bene very kyndly vsed at my cosin Gaudyes, and one day the more I stayed by reason that some of the company at Aye [Eye] wer not at home, w<sup>ch</sup> day I was entreated in the afternone to ryde to Harlston and I am no common market man, Wher I lighted at the end, wher M<sup>r</sup> Lawrence was, and so I went vp into a chamber wher first M<sup>r</sup> Lawrence began, and sent me a quarte of wyne and sugar, and after him I thinke neere twenty more sent me the lyke, and cam all glad to see me, that vnlesse M<sup>r</sup> Shreife himself had bene ther not any cold haue bene kyndlyer vsed; w<sup>ch</sup> thoughe it wer a thing nothing worthe yet cortesy and loue is rightley to be weyed and esteamed. I was at Ay, wher I was very kyndly entertayned, and laye at M<sup>r</sup> Hunninges wher I had great

<sup>1</sup> Edward Atslove, M.D., twice imprisoned for suspected connection with conspiracies in favour of Mary, Queen of Scots.

entertaynment, and he and I were both sworne free of the towne together in great solemnyty. The baylyfes presented me with muche wyne at M<sup>r</sup> Hunninges, and ther dyned with me that daye at dinner. S<sup>r</sup> Tho : Cornwalllys<sup>1</sup> was ther, and her honor of Bathe. S<sup>r</sup> Tho : told me of a letter yow sent to him about conyes. He desireth yow to hold him excused for his owne ground is so downe as he is enforced to restore it. Sir Jhon Hihum sent Pedds thether for the lyke but cold haue none. He wold wishe yow to store your ground with some conyes and Warner your man told me wher you might haue some. M<sup>r</sup> Hunninges had letters from London wherin was this newes, that one that was my L. Chancellers man is in the tower for treason. Tom Webb<sup>2</sup> and some others ar in the Tower for coyning. I meane M<sup>r</sup> Northes Webb, and they had sent two thousand pounce of that monye into Scotland. S<sup>r</sup> Arthurs brother Gylbert is dead vppon monday last. I was sent for both to my cosins at Waybred and allso to Aye that I must needs come to my cosin Frestons wher my cosin Grymson and his wyfe ar comminge, and of them all I shold otherwyse haue bene challenged of great vnkyndnes, so that my journey to Sir Charles must of necessity be deferred untill some other day to wayte of my syster, yf she so lyketh. My gray gelding had an extreame cold before his comming forthe, and is sycke which made me to send him home to be the better lookte to. If the Captayne be come or dothe come, only commend me to hym, it is enoughe. Commend me hartely to my oncle Anthony, etc.

This Saterday from Mendham [before June, 1594]

---

<sup>1</sup> Sir T. Cornwallis, of Brome Hall, co. Suffolk, Comptroller of the Household to Queen Mary and Treasurer of Calais, of whom it was said, without much foundation :

Who built Brome Hall? Sir Thomas Cornwallis.

How did he build it? By selling of Calais.

<sup>2</sup> Thomas Webbe, of London, convicted of coining and uttering Elizabeth shillings, received a pardon 2 July, 1594, on condition that he departed into the Low Countries.



## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2904, f. 101.)

SWEETEST AND ONLY BEST BELOVED BROTHER,

I am extremely sorrye I have not deserved that tytle yow would haue gyven me, but God be my judge. It was vppon an extraordinary euent, for the man that ransommed me in Lysbone, is now in England. And by my meanes hath receyved very espetyall fauors, and I had reason to feast him, that fetchd me out of so many myseryes, or els all the world wold haue condemned me. I knowe best my hart was otherwyse dysposed. Your busines in your letter shall be remembered all in as good manner as yow wold wishe, and all thinges els whatsoever is to be rememberd before my comming downe, which shall be shortly by Gods grace. The quene is now [on] her progresse. She hathe bene at Lambeth, at Wimbleton and at Osterley; she dynes this daye at M<sup>r</sup> Paynes, and comes tonight to Hygate, from thence to M<sup>r</sup> Warrens, and so to teboldes to stay without any termyne. This day Lopus was executed, and two portugalls more at tyborne. My L. Mountigue<sup>1</sup> is prysoner in my L. Keeper his howse for chrystening his owne chylde himself. He told his father my L. of Buckurst when it was done that they needed send for no preist, for it was done by him self. He durst not keepe it from the quene, and so is vnder commande in that howse. Sweete brother I have delt with my oncle Anthony about the matter and will do further. I fynde him very wayeward and stiffnecked. I will mollifye him as muche as I maye. I am sorry I am not able to ease yow myself, God knowes the secreats of all hartes and how I esteame yow. Sir Nicholas Bacon and my oncle Anthony commende them both to yow, and my syster. We dyned together at Arundells. Recommende me in the best manner yow may to your best self and my good syster.<sup>2</sup> I pray God perfecte her

<sup>1</sup> Anthony Maria Browne, 2nd Viscount Montague, married Jane, daughter of Lord Keeper Buckhurst in 1591.

<sup>2</sup> Anne, wife of B. Gawdy, was at that moment lying dead. The entry in West Harling Register gives the date of her burial, 9 June, 1594.

health at his good will and pleasure. Lastly remember me to my sweete cosyns, God blesse them and us all. I wishe my self with this letter, or els I pray God I lyve not one hower. In haste this vij<sup>th</sup> of June [1594].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2104, f. 105.)

MY SWEETEST AND ONLY BELOVED BROTHER,

I vnderstand of hevy newes by your man. I knowe yow ar wyse enoughe to comfort your self, and therfore I hold it frivolous to vse any farther ceremonye. God that dysposeth of all thinges, his will be fullfilled. Your man desired me to wryte in his behalf, and I say as mucche in myne owne, that all thinges shall be saved as farr as possyble maye be, but we wonderd that you writt nothing about our moorning clokes, but be the cheyfes thinges to haue them good and well made. Brother beleve me I make posthaste to come to your best self. I will ever dwell with yow, and serve yow as a faythfull brother, and assone as I may dyspache my thinges fyrst to accompany yow in your moorning. I will presently awaye, for I will ever moorne with yow and reioyce with yow. Yow ar the only earthly comfort I have in this world. We do expect a letter from yow presently of some further direction. And doubt not but all thinges shall be done to your best lyking. The quene is now at Hygate. Many a drye eye for the byshopp of London<sup>1</sup> who is now deade, and buryed, and I fear me not ascended into heaven (sauing my charyty). He hathe left fiftene hundred pounce a yeare to his chyl dren. My L. Amner D<sup>r</sup> ffletcher<sup>2</sup> hopethe to succede him. S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Norris<sup>3</sup> is dayly and howerly expected in England. Gray maketh haste. Commend me to your own hart, etc. [June 1594.]

<sup>1</sup> John Aylmer, a native of Tibetshall St. Mary, co. Norfolk, tutor to Lady Jane Grey, etc., became Bishop of London in 1577. His rule over that diocese was so severe and despotic that he was unpopular with all classes. He died 3 June, 1594.

<sup>2</sup> Richard Fletcher, Bishop of Worcester, Lord Almoner to the Queen, succeeded Bishop Aylmer, 30 December, 1594.

<sup>3</sup> From Brittany, where he commanded the English forces sent to help Henri IV. against the forces of the League. He was recalled in May of this year.

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 115.)

MY SWEETEST AND BEST BELOVED BROTHER,

I am afeard you will conceyue otherwyse of my long staying than it shall desarue. But I only refer myself to God who knoweth all seacreates and to your owne beste conceyte, which I relye wholly vppon. My sorrowes and the cause of them ar best knownen to my self, but sweet brother you shall hereafter have especyall good cause to beleue me. God forgiue vs all the faultes of our youthe, I speake lyke an old man, And am not Ignoraunt that yeares is stolen vppon me. Sweet Brother I am comming not to see yow, but to dwell with yow as a servitour and a faythfull comforter. I staye and depende heare vppon Luke Vnger, and I knowe not where or how to fynde him. This afternone we ar going to my L. of Sussex for he cam home but last night. His daughter is chrystened this afternone, the quenes ma<sup>te</sup> is the godmother. Of my fayth ther shall be no faulte in me. Good Brother let me dwell in your best thoughts, and forgyve my faults as yow will be forgyven in the lordes prayer, agaynst amendment let no man be. Your man Isack hath done all your busines very faythfully and honestly, and for that which I shold remember ther shall be nothing forgotten, yet I wonder mucche yow haue not yet taken order for morning clokes for yo<sup>r</sup> self and me, they must be had and can not be spared. I pray let ther be two cotes and two hattes spared for me. I speake to your selfe, bycause I know yow will haue care therof. I pray commende me to your best self, etc.

*n.d.* endorsed 1594.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> This date may be correct, though the date of the marriage of Robert Ratcliffe, 5th Earl of Sussex, with his first wife Bridget Morrison is given as 1599, but as their eldest daughter Elizabeth (the young lady referred to) was married on 20 February, 1607[8], it is probable "G. E. C." and other editors of the Peerage have assigned too late a date to the Earl's marriage. Moreover, that part of the letter which relates to the mourning agrees with letters of June, 1594, in which month Bassingbourne's first wife died.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 107.)

MY SWEETEST AND BEST BELOVED BROTHER,

I knowe yow haue cause muche to marvell that I have absented my self so longe from so good a brother, and him whom I holde so deare, neither of late that I haue sent to yow. All this colde I suffyciently answer, but I will forbear to shewe the cause ther of vntill I maye delyver the same my self in pryvate speache. Beleve me Sweete Brother no dystance of place, nor any cause whatsoever shall make any breache betwixt our hartes, for true love can not be severd, neither dothe it stand alltogether vppon presise ceremonyes, many of them are abolyshed out of our churche. I vnderstand by my man, and my oncle Anthonyes letter that ther is muche vnkyndnes conceyued. It may be I haue not deserued so muche as is layde vppon me. Truly Brother I have not lyued in any base or vnknownen places, as this bearer M<sup>r</sup> Cotton can partly tell yow, and it may be some especyall cause hathe lead me therunto, w<sup>ch</sup> I meane not yet to speake of. *Secreta mea mihi*. I wold not haue you subscribe as old Withitpoll did to his sonne. I thanke God I haue lyued, and not muche wanted, and yet I haue lyued in the best companye. Good Brother yf I wer assured of a free pardon from your self of all faultes passed I wold not long be from that sweete place, wher I might be assoyled by your own handes. Good Brother I can not write eyther so con[ten]tedly to my self or so pleasingly to yow, as I desire. I will only imparte to yow the present newes of the courte, this day ther was one of the prynce of Annault [Anhalt] his brothers at court entertayned very honorably by my L. of Essex, a man no way languaged not so much as in lattin, and therefore not very hyghly esteemed. He cam from the seige of Gronning only to see England. S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Norris lyeth still at Portsmouth for want of a fitt. S<sup>r</sup> Martin forbosher [Frobisher] is at sea with some fourtene Sayle. My

Lady Bridget Manners<sup>1</sup> is married to M<sup>r</sup> Turret of Lyncolneshire, and departed the [court]. My L. Elizabeth Sommersett is in her place, and one of her s[isters], My L. Katheryne Sommersett is one of the maydes of honnor. I have heare sent yow a brase of bu[ckes from] the hand of a fayre lady as any I knowe and to whom I [feel] mucche bounde to, I knowe not her fellowe. Touching the matter you spake of about being master of the game at Attleboroughe I could haue had it, and you shall haue it graunted when you will but the parke I assuer you shall be dysparked this migilmas, therfore I forbare it. Yf yow will be master of the game as it is, and all the rest of thes landes in Norfolke, I assuer yow yow shall and my L. of Sussex him self esteameth very hyly of yow, and told me of a very especyall fauor you did him now in yo<sup>r</sup> Shreualty about an execution. Touching the commission of the Subsidy do not thinke or suspecte I forgott any thinge, but all the lordes of England cold not preuayle in that suyte, for it is a thinge agreed of now quite agaynst lawe. I vnderstande S<sup>r</sup> Edward Wotton is at yo<sup>r</sup> howse, I praye recommend me to him as to one whom I loue in regard of trendship and kyndred, and honor him in regard of his worthy vertues, Recommende me often to that worthy and noble gentleman Mr. Edmund Bacon, etc.

ffrom Grenewiche this xxv<sup>th</sup> of August [1594].

S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Wotton commends him to yow, who lyes at M<sup>rs</sup> Keyeses howse, wher I lye, to whom I am mucche beholding in all kyndnes, and a truer frend I fynd not in the courte, and lyueth like the mirour of the courte. S<sup>r</sup> Will: Woodhowse is at court, and is noted by all ther, that he carryeth a dagger in his sleue to kyll any shold be prouder then him self. I speake it not from my self, or to his dysgrace, for he loveth and vsethe me euer very kyndlye.

---

<sup>1</sup> Bridget, daughter of John, 4th Earl of Rutland, married Robert Tyrwhitt, of Kettleby.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 109.)

MY GOOD BROTHER,

I spake with one of Semans sonnes at courte, who promysed to haue caryed a letter downe into contrye for me, but I cold not heare of him afterwards, so that I colde not conveniently send by any but by the carryars. I hope you have receyved my letters by Mr. Cotton and suche newes as I forgott ther I will imparte in theise lynes to your good self. Ther be two committed to the tower, Yorke and one Williams<sup>1</sup> the first being the sonne of S<sup>r</sup> Edward Yorke that dwelt in Ireland. They haue confessed very foule matters of treason, and that dyuers others haue sworne to do that w<sup>ch</sup> I hope to see them all hanged before one heare of her royall ma<sup>tie</sup> shall fall. They were sent ouer by garde captayne of Callys. Vppon sondaye last ther was a great myshaunce of the burning of the store house at Chatham, the losse is great, and heuily taken. It is vncerteyn whether it wer done by negligence or trecherye. My L. Bridget Manners is sente for backe to the courte, and it is thought will lye by the heeles vppon the dyspleasure of her marriage without leaue. The court remouethe not now at all. Ther was a very fowle murder lately donne in London by an alehouse keeper, the tapster, his syster, his mayde, and a waterman consentinge all vnto it. Ther was a chandler and his boye murdred. They are all apprehended and have confessed. The waterman shold haue had iiij<sup>s</sup> for carrying the dead body ouer the water, and lefte the tone [? one] half behynde. S<sup>r</sup> William ffuilliams is newly come ouer, and expected at courte vppon Sondaye. I heard Munn. Bacon and his brother wer at London going towards the Bathe, if I had known so muche I wold haue gone from the court to haue sene him. Vppon Wedensday last a very specyall straye commandement from the quene gyuen by my L. Chamberlayne,

<sup>1</sup> Edmund York and Richard Williams, apprehended for attempting to murder the Queen at the instigation of the English Jesuits in Spain, were executed in 1595

that no man shall come into presence, or attend vppon Her Ma<sup>tie</sup> wearing any long cloke beneath the knee, or therabouts, and w<sup>ch</sup> [is] very (?) straytly lookt to for the tyme. It commeth in a good hower for taylers and mercers and drapers for all men ar settled into longe clokes. Sweet brother I can saye no more, etc. From Grenewiche this xxix<sup>th</sup> of August [1594.]

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 111.)

MY BEST BROTHER,

I receyved your letters by your man, but I heardly perceyved by them that yow had latly any from me. I writt yow two very lately, the one by M<sup>r</sup> Cotton with a warrant for a brace of buckes in Attleboroughe, the other by the carryars, but to the purpose of answering your letters. I do confesse I have broke promise, but to holde my worde hereafter will be a sufficyent amendes, and so yow shall fynde I will do by Gods grace. I meane by his favor to se yow before the sessions to attend vppon yow thether. I am resydent either at Court, or els contynually with DON ANTONIO PERES<sup>1</sup> at Essex howse, whom my L. vseth with hye fauors, and fauors me mightely in regard of accompaning him. I hope he shall be a meanes of some good for me. I praye tell S<sup>r</sup> Edward Wotton that An. Peres *beza la mains de su Segnoria*, and my self in the lyke sorte. I thinke he will shortly be in those contryes. Sweet Brother I will tell yow what S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Clyfford sayd this other night being at supper with my L. that his lady told him that yf she had bene a mayde agayne she wold clayme interest in her old husband, and an old M<sup>rs</sup> of yo<sup>rs</sup> M<sup>rs</sup> ffraunces Sauage lyueth vnmaryed to this hower. Brother, I gave one a letter to receyve

<sup>1</sup> Don Antonio Perez, Spanish Secretary of State, who on falling into disfavour at the Spanish Court was imprisoned, but escaped and took refuge in England, where he was well received by Queen Elizabeth, Lord Leicester, and Lord Essex. He died in 1611 at Paris.

five pounds this Michilmas, yf ther come any suche to your hand, I pray paye never a penny, for I owe him no suche thing, and vppon the sending of him certeyne mony, which I did I shold have had my letter and bill and he keepes them both, I will never trust puritane for his sake. Yf any suche come to your handes pay not a penny only to my good oncle Anthony whatsoever he will, and to nobody els to whom I hartly commende me, etc. this xvj<sup>th</sup> of September[1594].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 121.)

SIR,

I have had as great care of your busines as I cold have of my Bidd or my hyest content. I fayled to speake with Bolton, and by that meanes I fayled to send to yow so sone as I determyned, I was dryven to make great enqyre of a convenyent messenger. At last I mett with one to whom I haue delyuered all suche thinges as I will hereafter sett doune in writinge. ffyrst I haue sent you downe a box of Leman comfettes so good as I cold gett for my mony. Then I haue sent you a hatt and a fether. I take the hatt to be good as may be, and it is pinked of the newest fashion which I thinke yow will not myslyke. In regard I am your poore brother I do ayme partly at yowr owne nature, that yow ar not an enemye to the newest fashion. Next I haue sent yow a doblot of fustian taffata, lace, sylke and Buttons fitting to the same. S<sup>r</sup> I pray let me not entreat yow to myslyke the coller, for I do not thinke that euer ther was a better coller, or a better fustian, and suche a one as I do not thinke ther is a better in England. It is not napte bycause that is saruingman lyke, and yow shall fynde that it will weare as softe, and well as velvet or sattin. I am warrented that the coller shall not chaunge. My L. Admyrall, and some others suche haue had suites of the same, and trymmed in the same kynde. I haue hard of no saruingman had any suche, and for my poore self I haue made choyse of the lyke. In one



word I haue made choyse of all theise thinges as waryly and well as a theife at the gallowes wold keepe him self from hanging. The Seale I haue sett a worke, not yet finished, which I will shortly bring downe with me. Touching the matter of the Subsidy rest secured vppon my woord. In breife I have done and will do ever as muche for yow, as I can for lyfe, wyfe, and children, and I pray sir forgett not according to your promyse to send my wyfe some of her mony. . . . Little newes. Ther was a pryse played at the Swann at the Banke syde, wher Turner, and one Dunn playinge the pryses, Turner thrust Dunn into the eye and so into the braynes that he fell downe dead without speaking any one word. The Duke of Sauoye meaning to betray Geneua was defeated and a greatte repulse. S<sup>r</sup> Robert Gardiner<sup>1</sup> is going to Ireland and as yet is not married to the widdow Spring. . . . I praye let me and my Bidd<sup>2</sup> be remembered to your self, my good Lady<sup>3</sup> and my uncle Anthony. London in haste [? 1597].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 123.)

SIR,

Synce my coming to London I haue dyspatched as much of your busines as is possyble. First I haue delyuered the letter and writing to Mr. Anthony Bacon who will take order according to your direction, and gyves you many thankes for your great kyndnes. I neaded not to have spoken to Luke Woolmer for I sawe yow at M<sup>r</sup> Pouelles put in right into the Commission Avoyer. Synce my comming to towne, for the commission of the Subsidy yow ar lykewyse already put in, for the commission of the Peace ther is none as yet made synce, but M<sup>r</sup> Pouell every daye looks for one, and yow neade not to make any doubte of it, for your

<sup>1</sup> Sir Robert Gardiner, Chief Justice of Queen's Bench, Ireland, appointed November, 1597, Lord Justice of Ireland.

<sup>2</sup> That is the earliest mention of Philip's wife, Bridget Strangman (*v.* Introduction).

<sup>3</sup> Bassingbourne's second wife, Dorothy Bacon (*v.* Introduction).

right placing, for M<sup>r</sup> Pouell is a most honest carefull man. Upon the delyvery of the letter to my Lo. Cheife Justice at my fyrst comming to him he asked me yf the letter came not from yow and so askte me for yow and willed me to delyver yow commendacions when I sholde se yow. I hearde him say that he had long looked for that letter bycause he ment to have a neue comission for Norfolke so that that way you shall be suere to be altered, and consydering how shorte that is, it is better then your forty shillinges of purpose only. The assyses for Suffolke and Norfolk beginnes at Cambridge the xxvii<sup>th</sup> of August so that ther will be tyme enoughe for the alteration. In the meane while all is well. I wolde gladly meete withe M<sup>r</sup> Daubney, or some other to sende downe the ell of lace. I hope to meete with some conuenyente messynger for the sending downe of the same safely to you.

M<sup>r</sup> Attorney <sup>1</sup> hathe buryed hys wyfe. I have not yet bene at Courte. I know not muche newes, Serieant Heale <sup>2</sup> shall be Justice of the Common place and Serieant Sauell, <sup>3</sup> Baron of the exchequour. It hathe pleased God to sende Bidd safe delyuery of a chylde. I pray Aske S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Bacon whether it be a boy or a mother. And thus withe my best becomming commendacions both to your good selfe and my good Lady, my cosin Edmund Bacon, and my cosin Phill. I leave you to the protection of the commander of this worlde and the worlde to come.

London this xxxth of June [1598].

---

<sup>1</sup> Bridget [Paston], wife of Sir Edward Coke, Attorney-General, died 27 June 1598.

<sup>2</sup> John Heale, Serjeant-at-Law [1593-4], was never raised to the Bench. He was Queen's Serjeant in 1602.

<sup>3</sup> John Savile, Serjeant-at Law [1593-4], was made Junior Baron of the Exchequer 1 July, 1598. He was knighted in 1603.

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804. f. 125.)

SIR,

Yowr man Isacke and my selfe have dyspached all your busines as carefully and as well as we cold and I hope yow shall have no occasion of dyslike. I can neither wright largely nor tediously for I am not well, and trobled withe an exceding headake. I have bene bothe with Sir Will. Woodhouse and M<sup>re</sup> An. Bacon, and they have bothe promysed very largely, Sir William and myself in very good kyndenes, as he never had other cause for the parties of the other syde ar not well pleased and therfor my othe gave him no occasion of dyscontentmente. I wolde have gone about your matter according to your dyrection and myne owne lyking, but that S<sup>r</sup> William willed me in any wyse to stayer awhile, and he wolde take an other corse to effecte it, but yf I se ther be nothing but delayes I will only followe it as I haue bene aduysed by some speciall wise frendes of myne, and suche as will procure it at courte, and without all doubte I will follow it in suche sorte, as I will bring yow downe the letter with me.

I do feare I shall not be at the assyses bycause my wyfe stayethe heare vppon her mother who I trust in God shall do well. Your busines shall not quayle [I] assuer yow. . . .

My L. Cheife Justice takethe the matter very kyndly at your handes, and will love you the better while he lyves. What my L. Keeper and my L. Treasurer conceyvethe of your carefull service herin I leave to M<sup>r</sup> Mawe to reporte to yow. I sholde have sent my Lady Bacon some Cornishe mattes donne to the value of one and fyfty yardes, and I have bought it and given earnest therfore, but I protest of my faythe I wanted spare mony to laye out for it, and therfore yf in the behalfe of my L. Bacon you will sende me forty shillinges, about to which rate it will comme, I will sende it downe this nexte weeke and it will be sone enoughe before my L. come into the contrye. You may sende vp by the carryar withe the letter to Gryse, which you may enclose within a letter to me. I praye fayle not therof as even you will commaunde

me. And what other matter you have to do it shall be done. Newes I will let alone for I knowe none worthe the writing but that I sawe two Knightes made at courte last Sunday S<sup>r</sup> John Sauage, and S<sup>r</sup> Richarde Holton.<sup>1</sup> No newes at all out of Irelande but olde about some cesse, and S<sup>r</sup> Henry Harrington, whiche is stayle in the contrye. Lyshborne they say is taken by the Hollanders.<sup>2</sup> And Sebastian the Portingall King lyueth vppon good reporte of great credit. Thus with myne owne and my wyfe's best commendations, etc.

London this xxxth of June [1599].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 129.)

In this letter he talks of the favour he is in with the Lord Chief Justice who offered to put him in the Commission [of the peace] and continues "but you must thinke I am neither so vayne nor so symple to accept of it, being euery way vnable and vnworthy for the place, yet I must accept kyndly of my L. goodwill, and so I will be willing to do him any service. I am indeede more then reasonable great withe him. I gaue him a present that he tolde me neuer any gaue him one that pleased him more. Herry Windom is neue com into the comyssion (which I am suing out) by M<sup>r</sup> Attorneys meanes.

The Shreifes be not y[et] prickte. M<sup>r</sup> Nath: Bacon<sup>3</sup> is newly come in for Norfolk and S<sup>r</sup> Tho: Barmston for Suffolke. The tilting is p[ast] and many runners, and the quene thanked them after [the] old fashion as she was wont to do M<sup>r</sup> Rafe Bone<sup>4</sup> . . .

<sup>1</sup> Sir J. Savage, of Rocksavage, co. Chester, and Sir R. Houghton, of co. Lanc.

<sup>2</sup> A letter from J. Chamberlein to Dudley Carleton says, "It is said the Dutch fleet has taken Lisbon almost dispeopled by the plague, 28 June 1599." (Cal. of State Papers.)

<sup>3</sup> He became Sheriff of Norfolk in 1599, but Sir T. Barnston [Barnardiston] was never Sheriff of Suffolk.

<sup>4</sup> The letter is torn here.

The newes out of Irelande is that Teron [Tyrone] waxes greater and more rebell euery daye then other. Ther is speache [here] that my L. of Shrewsberry and S<sup>r</sup> Fraunces Vere go thether in commyssion together. My L. of Essex is [not yet] at lyberty but remaynethe still in the same place he was. My L. Waldegrave<sup>1</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> syster was at the tilting but I saw her not. I did think you wolde make hast to haue all your Lyveryes done out of hande, and therefore I haue sent you doune the rest of the buttons which come to fourescore and one dosen, which makethe up iust sixskore. I haue sent besydes fyue dosen, which I wolde haue delyuered to Sutton for my mans cloke. I haue sent besydes xxvi yardes of the lace which wayeth iust five ounces and a halfe, so that all the lace together commethe to xxiiij ounces and a halfe. I haue soued them within a shepseskin wher you shall fynd ii bookes and a combe besydes. All the rest shall be made vp agaynst the next weeke without fayle, wishing that this letter may come in convenient tyme to stay your sending till nexte weeke when by God's grace I will bring yow all the neues my selfe. And so with my kyndest remembrance, etc. This xxijth of november [1599.]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 135.)

SIR,

I colde not meete with a conuenient messinger since my comminge from Bathe. I sent you downe a lampry pye by the carriars, whiche I hope you haue receyved it before this tyme. It was the best I cold present you withe at this present. I haue sent a packett of lettres from D. Lycence, otherwise in my opinion Do: Stockfishe, whose physicke was fitt for such a patient as my selfe. I gaue him but a reasonable fee, and he gaue me but reasonable stockfishe aduyse, whiche did neither good nor hurte. I thanke god I am somewhat better of my hearing. I

<sup>1</sup> Sir William Waldegrave, of Smallbridge, married Jemima, daughter of Sir N. Bacon, Bart., sister to Bassingbourne Gawdy's second wife.

only vsed the Kinges bathe, and was stayed tenn dayes longer then I ment bothe by my Lo. Chamberline, and his lady, and at last war ready to haue fallen out withe me bycause I wold come before him. I was more then ordinarily bounde to them bothe, and I thinke myselfe happy that I tooke a iust occasion to be ther at that instant, for I thinke since Bathe first smoked ther was neuer greater nor more worthy companye in that towne. And my Lo. kepte the most honorable house that euer was kepte ther, all the gentlemen rounde about cam in to my Lo: and he had very many and great presentes gyuen him. I was at courte vppon Sondaye last wher yo<sup>r</sup> olde acquayntance M<sup>r</sup> Richarde Lee<sup>1</sup> was knighted, and had ther thyrtie men in a Lyuerye very well apoynted, going ambassadour into Muscouia; ther was knighted withe him S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Ridgeway<sup>2</sup> a westernne man, that married S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Stannophes wyfes Sister. Ther is no great neues out of Ireland but that my Lorde is going a iorneye for the northe of Irelande. S<sup>r</sup> Henry Doccerye<sup>3</sup> hathe done some seruyce vppon the landing of his men in the north of Irelande. The rumors and neuses touching my Lo: of Essex ar vncertayne, and therfore I leaue to write of them. My L. Riche was sent for to answer some matters touching her writing. When I vnderstande further of eyther of them bothe you shall heare more from me, but touching my L. of Essex I knowe yet of no great alteration. Ther is some physycke for you amongst Mr. Nicholas his lettres and I payde for the physicke. Thus with my kyndest and best commendacions bothe to your good selfe and my good Lady, to whome I wishe all happynes, I commytt you to God, And I will not forgett my Ladyes letter. I meane by Gods grace shortly to see you at home.

London this v<sup>th</sup> of June [1600].

---

<sup>1</sup> Sir R. Lee, of Billesley.

<sup>2</sup> Sir T. Ridgway, of Torr Abbey, co. Devon.

<sup>3</sup> Sir H. Dockwray, *i.e.* Docwra, was sent in 1599 to the North of Ireland to aid in suppressing the rebellion of Tyrone. He was afterwards Governor of Derry, and raised to the peerage as Baron Docwra of Culmore, 15 May, 1621

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 136.)

SIR,

I can not chose but in a louing brotherly affection salute you with a few lines, I have sent downe a trunke to thetforde whiche I wolde willingly my Bidd shold sende for, but not to stirr it while I comme, whiche is withe as muche speede as maye be, comming homewardes by my Lo. and La. of Sussex who sent for me to come to them, and to Chylton, and so by Gods grace to Harling. The newes of my Lo. of Essex cause hearing wer to no purpose to tell you, bycause euery body knowes it so well, but now restethe as he did and in the same place as before withoute any further speeche, but indeade euery body thinkes he sholde be forthewith sett at lybertye, withe theis conditions to forbear going into Wales, and comming to the courte till her Ma<sup>ties</sup> pleasure be so knowen. My Lo. Keeper the last Starchamber daye made mention of my Lo. and greatly commended his confession of his faultes, and his humyliation whiche had turned her Ma<sup>ties</sup> displeasure into mercye. Ther was a most notable cause handled that daye, whiche heilde from viij of the clocke till fyue. I thinke it better worthye to be put in Hollinshedes cronycle then any conduyte, or Lo. Mayors Henchmen. The case was betwixt M<sup>r</sup> Fouler, and his wyfe, whiche marryed M<sup>r</sup> Boughtens daughter of Warwickshire, who marryed S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Brockettes syster your kynswoman and myne. M<sup>rs</sup> Fouler being as infamous almost as Mall Neubery parted from her husband being a most honest gentleman, and lyued at her owne pleasure, and consorted her selfe with euery companion, misvsing her husbände euery way, and rayling of him to the vttermost. At last she encountred withe one William Haynes, that not long synce was S<sup>r</sup> George Gyffords boye, and I well remember he wolde once haue serued me, but now lyues vnder the tytle of a capayne. This cap: insinuated so far into her famyliartye as at euery inn and alehouse they grewe bed fellowes, and not content withe this lybertye but plotted a matter together to bring M<sup>r</sup> Fouler witheyn compasse of hye treason, and delt so conningly

as he laye in the tower halfe a yere as innocently as any man euer did, and was faynte to worke his owne purgation by the dyscouery of their villany, whiche I will tell yow at further leysure, but they wer bothe brought in to the Starchamber and her brother Henry Boughton withe her and one Gascoingue an actor in this tr[a]gydye and breifly I will tell yow the sensure, and iudgmente they had in the Starchamber, first, her censure was to be caryed to Brydewell, and ther to be often well whipped, and afterwarde to haue perpetuall imprisonment. I hearde that at her Judgement she sounded [swooned] and so was faynte to be conveyed out into a byrome . . . Haynes his iudgement in regarde of his incontinent lyfe withe her approued, and complotting the deathe of her husbände was fyned at two hondred ponde, to perpetuall imprisonmente, and to stand nayled on the pylory, and some gaue iudgmente to haue bothe his eares cutt of, most of them spake very bitterly agaynst him, that suche base companions as he, that often crepte into the famylyarty of honest, and vertuous gentlewomen, and seduced their myndes not only to incontynencye, but to all other myscheife whatsoever. Henry Boughten his iudgment was this, a hundred pound fyne, and imprisonment during their honors pleasure, for bycause that he had bene bonde to his one syster, all of them rated him most extremly and called him baude, and pandor, and to muche the greater faulte to his owne syster, and that it was admyrable in any man to haue so base a mynde as to be a bawde. I wishe that all the bawdes of Englande had the lyke or a heuyer Judgement. I hope the occupation will groue out of request, consydering what is successe they have fownde. I pray God it prove no worse. Gascoings iudgment, bycause he complotted withe them bothe about the bawdery, and their knauery, and for suffering one Owen that was a traytor to escape who was a party in the cause, was to ryde vppon an asse withe his face to the tayle from Westmister to Cheapsyde, and at eache place to loose an ear, perpetuall improsonment, and a great fyne but yet he is nothing worthe. Your man Richarde was withe me, and spake to me about warrauntes for buckes, you shall want none, and bycause I know not your present



neede before my comming, I haue sent you downe a brace enclosed within this letter, one to Mr. Coote, an other to M<sup>rs</sup> Tyrrell, I keepe more store. My Lady Southwell hathe given you one, and me another whensoever yow meane to sende, it shall be well served, I did not forgett yow without putting me in mynde. I have brought that my Lady writt for yet I wolde not have my truncke brooke open before my comming which shall be by Gods grace about Thursdays. S<sup>r</sup> Edward Baynam, Tom Dutton, Tom Badger and some others being somewhat merrie sett one night vppon the watche, they were brought in vppon a ryott into the Starrchamber, he fyned at fyue hundred marke, the rest at ij<sup>li</sup> a peece, and their ouersyght much noted. My Lo. of Southampton being apoynted to comme to my Lo. Deputy stayed somewhat longer then he sholde, being intercepted withe iij<sup>o</sup> foote, he being but tenne horse in all was constrayned to charge them, and gott himselfe well throughe them, two of his company slayne righte out, and M<sup>r</sup> Pinchbackes chute [*sic*] one of them so sore hurte, as it is thought he is dead. Thus I have acquainted you with as much as is worth the knowing, or at least within the compass of my knowledge. Desyring in all good manner to be remembred to yowr good selfe, and my good Ladye, to whom I must neede confess I wishe as well to as to myne own Harte, or to my faythefull Bidd, whom I will entreat you bothe to love, and make much of in my absence, etc. London, this xiiij<sup>th</sup> of June [1600].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 127.)

S<sup>r</sup>,

I do protest of my faythe towardes god, and of my faythefull loue towardes your selfe I haue taken as great payne synce my commyng to towne about your mens clokes, as euer I tooke in any suche matter in my lyfe. Deuysing and casting to haue all thinges of the best, and for the best. But yf yow euer acquaynted withe Taylers and sylkemens promyses as I am, you wolde saye that I

haue bothe taken great paynes, and bene very carefull. I cam to towne vpon Tuesday, and not before. I haue fyrst bought yow fower yardes and a halfe of velvet tawny, for goodnes and eunnes [?newnes] of color the best I colde see in London, and yet I saue in twenty of the best places. It cost xxi<sup>s</sup> the yard. If I haue any faythe to god Stone and Hix did aske me six and twenty for that was neither so good nor anything lyke color, for it is not full of gumm but clene silke. And I will assuer you S<sup>r</sup> that all kynde of sylkes ar very deare. Nexte S<sup>r</sup> I went ouer all Sn<sup>t</sup> Martins, and deuysed to see the best laces I colde comm to of tawny and golde. I founde all bynding and gallown laces stale, heauyer then this, whiche I deuysed, and is not commonly worne. And I hope bothe the color silke and golde is of the best. The pryce withe muche adoe is iiij<sup>s</sup> ij<sup>d</sup> the ounce. I haue cast by my cloke that euery one must haue iij yardes and a halfe to do it fayre. I haue sent downe fowre skore and two yardes of the lace which yow shall fynde by measure, which wayethe just xixtene ounces, whiche yow shall fynde vppon triall to be true, there must be fower and thyrty yardes more for all the clokes besydes myne, which I will send downe by some messynger or other, or at best by Bury carryar. I colde gett no more lace done in the time. I haue sent you downe nine and thirty dozen of buttons of tawny golde and syluer at nine pence half penny the dosen, the rest shall be sent for the clokes iust the proportion for fower and twenty as fast as may be. They will all take iust sixskore dosen. I haue sent yow downe besides iiij ounces of stiching sylke, and ij of sowing sy[l]ke, it cost ij<sup>s</sup> ij<sup>d</sup> the ounce. Yf you shall neede any more let ther be written ii or three wordes by Norwich carryars, and that or any thing els shall be bought and sent downe by Bury carryars next weeke, when by God's grace you shall receyve all the rest of youre thinges for my selfe and my Ladye. I was deceyved by my workmen so muche, as I was driven to send my man after the carriar a horsebacke (as I thinke) to Ware, but, Sir, the love I owe to yow shall make me sende my horse or my selfe much farther to do yow any service. I haue sent yow besydes a box withe fower pownde of orange confettes at xx<sup>d</sup> the pounce. I am sure they are good. Ther is

three nayles of veluett for a cape, sylke and lace by the self [*? itself*]. I pray let them withe the yarde and the halfe of bayes be delyuered to Sutton for my other cloke. I will send him downe fyue dozen buttons for it nexte weeke withe your thinges. The bayes is reasonable good and of a good coller, yf you chose yowr lighter it will weare redd. I sawe other fashioned clokes, but none better then this in my poor conceyte. And thus an end of all theis matters. I will breifly tell yow the neués of the tyme present. Much talke and speache of peace withe Spayne and that the Commyshioners sholde meete at Roun. Som thinke it will hardly be accorded. My L. of Essex still wher he was and little hope of his enlargement. My L. Monioy is thought sholde go ouer into Irelande but he is very vnwilling therwith, and laborethe the contrarye. My Lo. of Dunkelly<sup>1</sup> fought in the feilde withe S<sup>r</sup> Calistines Brooke<sup>2</sup> vppon Wednesday last and only had one thrust at him, and so the fraye ended, for my lord thrust him quight throughe the hande vp into the arme. The cause breifly was S<sup>r</sup> Cal: had promysed hys syster mariage, and gott her withe chylde and then refusing her my Lo. her Brother vnder-tooke her iust quarrell, whiche god iustly reuenged. Ther is newes besydes of the tragycall death of M<sup>rs</sup> Ratclifie the mayde of honor who euer synce the deathe of S<sup>r</sup> Alexander her brother hathe pined in suche straunge manner, as voluntarily she hathe gone about to starue her selfe and by the two dayes together hathe receyued no sustinaunce, whiche meeting withe extreame greife hathe made an ende of her mayden modest dayes at Richmonde vppon Saterdaye last, her Ma<sup>tie</sup> being [*present?*] who commaunded her body to be opened and founde it all well and sounde, sauing certeyne stringes striped all ouer her harte. All the maydes euer synce haue gone in blacke. I saw it my selfe at court, wher I saw the quenes ma<sup>tie</sup> talke very long withe my L. Henry Howarde and your oncle Fra: Bacon. Great running at Tilt, wherof my L. Gray a greet man

<sup>1</sup> Richard de Burgh, Lord Dunkellin, afterwards Earl of Clanricard.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Calisthenes Brook, knighted by Sir Wm. Russell, Deputy of Ireland, at Ruthdrum in May 1597.

at courte is thoughte to be the cheefe. All other matters I must referre to a further leysure, only I will now leave, loving bothe yow and my Lady as muche as myne owne harte, or Bidd. And I pray God, that you may long lyve and love together as faythfully and contentedly as ever any in this worlde. I pray let me be recommended to yow bothe, and to my oncle Anthony whom I pray make partener of the newes. In extream hast. This xvj<sup>th</sup> of Nouember [1600.]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 138.)

SIR,

I have had no small care to effecte all your busines, whiche yow shall particularly vnderstande by thes lynes following. It was Sondag before I cam to London, so that I was not at Courte that daye, but Monday and the three dayes following I was for the most parte at the Courte; and I do assuer yow of my faythe I sawe not any one Norfolke man ther but S<sup>r</sup> Arthur Hinningham, who to my thinking lokte vppon me, and spake to me as though he had not bene well gyrt. But I fitted him in the right kynde, being a right matche betwixt vs, bothe poore and proude. I have hearde he hathe bene a great advocate for M<sup>r</sup> Lovell,<sup>1</sup> whose cause I will fyrst deale withe. I colde neither meete withe S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Towneshend, nor M<sup>r</sup> Na: Bacon, so that by them hetherto I have done nothing, nor colde vnderstande anything. So that of force I was driven to vnderstande all from M<sup>r</sup> Wade, who pretendethe greatly to love yow for allyance about your wyfes (*sic*). M<sup>r</sup> Lovell lay by the heeles some tenn dayes, and yet remaynes in the olde Bayly, and his horses wer sent downe not being yet fully dyscharged: he did within this three dayes exhybit a bill especyally agaynst you for not fynding horse, and being at other charges, as he was, and how all that was done was done cheifly by your instigation. The Councell vtterly reiected it, and tolde him, that you wer knowen to be an especyall honest and good common wealthes man, and

<sup>1</sup> The Lovells lived in the neighbouring parish of East Harling.

they wolde receyue no matter agaynst yow as now consydering it was bothe of splene and mallice, and as Mr. Wade sayes he meanethe once agayne to attempt it. Mr. Wade tolde me that now after his commytting he hade made very great frendes, whiche I vnderstood hathe coste him very deare, and by yowre leave I perceyved by Mr. Wade, that he hathe tasted very deeply of his purse. And this is all I can saye concerning him as yett, till I have spoken with S<sup>r</sup>. Jhon and Mr. Na: Bacon. I have taken suer order with Mr. Wade about your name, thoughe colorably his man was to have a rewarde. Next I delt very effectually with my Lo. of Sussex, who absolutly of his honor hathe given me his honorable woorde that yow shall have them all, And for ought that I perceyved he had forgotten Sir William Walgrave's motion. But now all is made as fyrm, and suer as yow can wishe. Then I went to my Lady Southwell, I delt with her, she asked me fyrst very kyndly for yow. Then making that motion, "In good faythe (she answered) she was very sorry, she had passed her woorde to an other. Yf yow had spoken or sent before none sholde haue gone before yow," I was so bolde to aske her who it was, and then she answered, that therin I must pardon her but yf that party do not stand all and eury one shall go wholly with yow for the fyrst voyce. The shreifes be not yet prickt till next Sondag, ther be in the bill S<sup>r</sup> Will<sup>m</sup> Paston, M<sup>r</sup> E. Doyly and M<sup>r</sup> Jenkenson; for Suffolke, S<sup>r</sup> He: Northe, M<sup>r</sup> Plater, M<sup>r</sup> Ed. Bacon.<sup>1</sup> They say M<sup>r</sup> Doyly and M<sup>r</sup> Bacon shall be the men. Very great and braue shewes at Running at Tilt, all the Ambassadors ther of all cuntryes. S<sup>r</sup> Rob<sup>t</sup> Drury was wonderfull gallant, and was not heilde to be enferiour to the best runner that daye. Sir, I sent you a letter by my cosin Cresner withe a token of my love towards yow, and yf yowr vnworthy neybour did not keepe my mony withe false othes, and periured promyses my wyfe and I might have bene able to helpe yow better then we can. I wishe neither of us bothe had ever knowne him or his, vnlesse they wer better. Your bandes I left with M<sup>r</sup> Foskewe for ther was none of the partyes at home, but

<sup>1</sup> Richard Jenkinson, pricked Sheriff for Norfolk, and Edward Bacon for Suffolk.

Richard Spencer and he cam to me that morning, gyving me his faythe that within fouer dayes he wolde seale, only staying but to take counterbandes of the other two. I will assuer yow, S<sup>r</sup>, the worst of them as I heare is sufficyent for the mony. Uppon my coming downe I will see what good bargayne I can make for you, or els bring you the bandes. M<sup>r</sup> Foskewe was quight without mony, for otherwyse he was willing enough to have delte with you. Thus with my best commendacions, etc.

London this xxj<sup>th</sup> of November [1600].

If yow have forsett any thing for me to do write vp by the carryars, I will sende to them for a letter. One thing I forgott, that M<sup>r</sup> Wade tolde me he never knewe any man committed in the lyke cause, and yet dyvers others have bene complayned of to the lyke effect, he meetes not with a dogg, but he will tell him what service he and his men did in S<sup>nt</sup> Jeames his feilde last yeare.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 140.)

SIR,

I mett with this bearer Denton, who told me he was presently to go into Norfolk. I sawe him at court as yesterday being Son-daye, wher I was till eleven of the clocke at night. I spake ther with S<sup>r</sup> Jho: Tow[nshend] whose man ther deliuered me a letter from yow. And we talked about all your busines. Your oncle Bacon is gone home. I haue now dispatched all matters, and can satisfye yow in every poynte. First about M<sup>r</sup> Louell. Bothe from S<sup>r</sup> Jhon [Touneshend] and M<sup>r</sup> Wade this is the poynte. He hathe submytted him self fawning more lyke a dog then a man, and hathe confessed his fault w<sup>th</sup> promyse to shew all his armor(?) and to be contrybutary to all charges, yf he do not at all tymes, vppon yo<sup>r</sup> information it will light very heavy vppon him and for any other writing from the councell they say there will be none. My Lady Southwell<sup>1</sup> yesterday sent for me, and commendes her two

<sup>1</sup> The Lady Southwell so frequently referred to was the widow of Sir Robert Southwell, who died in October, 1598.

yow most hartely. And synce I spake w<sup>th</sup> her she is enformed that yow and S<sup>r</sup> Rob<sup>t</sup> Mansfeld joyne together, she is content vppon those conditions (for he is the man) that all shall gyve yow the fyrst voyce, so that yow will stand w<sup>th</sup> him for the second. I have not yet spoken with Sir Edward Cleere but I will. M<sup>r</sup> Jenkenson is shreive, and M<sup>r</sup> Edward Bacon. S<sup>r</sup> Arthur Henningham wold fayne haue bene shreife, and my lady Dygby tooke great paynes for him, but he missed the cashion [occasion] w<sup>ch</sup> put him in a great chafe. S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Townshend, S<sup>r</sup> Christopher Heydon, and S<sup>r</sup> Theo: firthe wer before the councell, and none of all the rest wer sent for or cam in, but they are commaunded vppon ther allegiance neither to send or accept any challendge and they shall all be bounde to the peace for themselves, their frendes and followers and this is all, etc. London this xxiiij<sup>th</sup> of Nouember[1600].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804. f. 133.)

SIR,

I haue sent you downe by Bury carriar a vessell of muskeden, and an other of Canarye. I tooke it they be as good as good may be, only this haue a care that after they come home they be not broched in three or fower dayes, but stand in the seller and settle for I wolde have a care to be had of them, bycause I trowe they be good. I haue sent you downe besydes mattes fo<sup>r</sup> my lady. I thinke ther be no better. Yf I sholde tell you that her ma<sup>tie</sup> had mattes of him this other day you wolde hardly beleue me but it is so, and he swore they wer nothing so good. My Lady writt to have a hundred and fyfty yardes, I pray let her measure out just so muche, and keepe the rest by the selfe, for ther is more than her rekonig. I haue sent yow downe besydes a baskett, wherin yow shall fynde thre skore oranges and thyrtye lemons, vj bookes for yowr selfe, and one for my lady, iij payre of shooes, the rest of the thinges shall come downe withe myne, yow shall not want anything that is to be remembred. The reason of my longer staye then I looked for is this, My L. Keeper hathe not signed any

warrante this fortnighte, and euery daye hathe apoynted to signe, this last nighte he apoynted most assuredly to do it, whiche yf it wer done I colde dyspache the other in lesse then ij dayes ; for ought that I perceyve Herry Windum is lyke to be lefte out in this commyssion I sue oute, for ther is no body followes the matter for him. My oncle Justice Gavdy writt for an other in Norfolke on Docter Talbot, whiche my L. Keeper re[fused] but allowed very exceedingly well of both the other. I doubt not but by Gods grace to have all dyspached before Sondag and then with all poste home to my Bidd, and so to your good selfe, wher I mucche desier to be. The newes is that ther was a great and a generall speache of my L. of Essex, that he shoulde haue gone to the tower vppon mondaye, and tuesdaye last, and assuer yo<sup>r</sup> selfe he is very sicke and ill at ease. All the lordes of the Councell . . . the daye after the terme to haue all gentlemen go . . . and to enquire out for suche libellers as haue spoken agaynst some of her ma<sup>ties</sup> councell, and wherin he was partly touched, and that all men sholde forbear to speake of princes causes, and that some sholde reporte how her ma<sup>tie</sup> had no care of Irelande, wherin the councell at the starrchamber showed what a greate and royall armye her ma<sup>tie</sup> sent, and that herselfe often before my L. going ouer satt in councell, and yeilded more then he asked bothe for foote and horse, and howe that he had done nothing at all, and that he had gone quighte against his commyssion, and of his pryuate talke withe Terone, and other matters whiche were now to longe to relate I will bring it home, by worde of mouthe. I will give you none but one of M<sup>r</sup> Lovells preparatyves. It is fully agreede of my Lo. Monioye his going ouer, and he dothe prouyde himselfe for Irelande. My L. of Dunkelly was committed to the fleete vppon Wedensdaye laste about the quarrell betwyxt S<sup>r</sup> Calistines Brooke, and hymselfe bycause they wer forbidden bothe to meddle in this matter by her ma<sup>ties</sup> Councell. S<sup>r</sup> Tho. Jermyn was marryed vppon mondaye last to Killigrues daughter of the pryuy chamber, wher (as I hearde) was very greate company. Ther is heauy newes out of Brydewell for Mall Neuberry and Mall Digby haue bene carted three dayes together, when one



of them had lyke to haue bene killd with a blowe of a stone vppon her foreheade wherin I obserue that stones not being sett in their right places maye as well offende as please. Mall Newberry hathe remoued her lodging to Newgate. My L. Cheife Justice and she can not agree by any meanes but for ought that I perceyue Mall Newberry goes by the worst since Morgan lyues in reasonable dyscreditt still, but yet she keepes her selfe from coching, or canting (?). Theis wenches that ar called by ther short names makes me remember a gentleman that once made a reporte of Bridget Bowne, Mall Kempe, and Nan Coote, they thryue none of them all neuer well synce. Thus with my best and kyndest remembrance to your good selfe, my good Lady and my oncle Anthony I committ yow to God this present frydaye [*circ.* Dec. 1600].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804. f. 142.)

SIR,

I am at last returned to my Bidd within a lesse compasse then Vlisses cam from the seidge of troye to his Penelope, and I partly doubt whether Bidd could haue endured tenn yeares absence, for she beginnes to complayne but of a lentes abstinence, and therfore I am dryuen to please her withe hollydayes after so long fasting. But to an nother purpose the cause bothe of my long staye, and that yow harde not from me, was bycause I was dryven tenn dayes to wayte vppon my L. Keeper, who was partly sicke, and partely discontented, my selfe besydes not being very well at ease. I have at last brought downe the commission and ij *demimus* (sic) *potestatem* the one for M<sup>r</sup> Windum the other for my Cosin Holdiche. Ther be two letters to S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Townshend, I pray as sone as yow may conveyently let the commission the *dedimus potestatem* for M<sup>r</sup> Windum withe them be sent to him, for the Sessions beginning at Linn, the commission may ther be delyvered to the clarke of the peace, the other for my Cosin

Holdiche, I pray keepe it for me till I come to Harling. Sir, now my wyfe and I ar ready to wayte vppon yow, and my Lady, and if it please yow to send for vs vppon Friday night nexte, we will come to Harling on Satterdaye or els vppon Sundaye at nighte yf you will sende, by Gods grace we will come vppon Mondaye, whiche yf theis yow thinke best and fytttest, we will prepare our selves to be fitt for the iorney. If I might be so bolde I wolde entreat yowr coche bothe in regarde of the colde and the foulnes of the weather. Yow sholde do my wyfe a great pleasure. All your thinges yow spake for ar comming downe this weeke, and in regarde that som wer not readye, the rest wer faynte to stay that they might come altogether, whiche I have as carefully done as my best skill and knowledge wolde allowe me. I have sent you herinclosed two warrants for dooes, ther be more comming, one my Lo. William hathe gyven you saying that any tyme you might be a suffycient warrant to sende to any of the parkes, wher my L. hathe interest, the other my oncle bestowed vppon me. My L. William is mightely incensed agaynst your neighbour, who is so lately crept so hye into commysion, as the fyrst that I hearde tell of it, was my Oncle to whom he cam withe a preamble of an houre long of the love that had bene betwene ther fathers and how he loved him, whiche my oncle muche wondred at, for he tolde me he saw him not this fower yeare before and that he was the most desembling man that ever lyved. At last he delyvered him a *dedimus potestatem* whiche was directed to my L. Bishopp,<sup>1</sup> my oncle<sup>2</sup> and Baron Clarke.<sup>3</sup> After he had a dyscourse about yow of an hower long whiche I have no tyme to write of, but yow will thinke it worthe the hearing, and I assuer yow that yow wer much beholding to my oncle for answering in your behalfe, but the conclusion was that my oncle sholde be a meanes to conclude perfect amytye betwixt your houses. My oncle muche wondred how he sholde gett in, and

<sup>1</sup> Richard Bancroft, Bishop of London.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Francis Gawdy, Judge of Queen's Bench.

<sup>3</sup> Sir Robert Clarke, Junior Baron of the Exchequer, (1588) was Justice of Assize for Norfolk and Suffolk in 1600.

so did my Lord Cheif Justice beyond all crye, and they both willed me to learne how he sholde comm in, which I did. I thinke my L. Cheif Justice will gyve him a lyft before y<sup>e</sup> next assyses. The meanes that he camm in by was by my L. Northe. For after he had missed of his knighting for which he flewe such a pitche as no man did this twenty yeare he was contented at last of his meare humilitey to be made a Justisse of peace, and out of the peace may they turne but never shall they turne him out of the tother. He made such a speache at my L. Northes boorde how he had long lyved in blindnes and that now God had opened his eyes, so that he sawe his errors wherin he had lyved so long, that as all the contry have longe synce knowen him for a noted fool, so is he now become the moste notorious asse that was at courte this many yeares. His speache in the ende tended to the good he ment to do his contry. Whervppon my L. vppon meere zeale procured him to be in commysion. And S<sup>r</sup> Henry Northe for meere affection, was content to take ij. c.<sup>li</sup> of him, and Mr. Powell was more reasonable to take but bare forty pounce for restoring him to his former place. I have neither tyme nor leysure to write any more at this present, for I am in Robin Chatterton's taking, Bid is vnlacing, I am vntrussing, and ther is a feate to be done. All other newes I will reporte my selfe, only this my L. of Essex is very weak and ill at ease, and viij phisitions have sett it downe vnder their handes that vnles he wer removed he colde not escape. I have sent yow a payre of spurres, and my Lady a payre of stockins, the rest by Gods grace shall come this weeke alltogether. I haue brought downe my L. of Essex his booke whiche I will bring to Harling. And now agaynst Christmas we thinke yow sholde remember olde Peter the tothe drawer for a Christmas man in the Chimneye corner but I do not knowe that euer he traulyed withe any mystris. Thus withe my best and kyndest remembrance bothe to your good selfe and my good Lady I committ yow to God this xix<sup>th</sup> of December [1600] Tostocke.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 144.)

SIR,

Since my writing of those letters I sent I was this present fryday at courte, wher I receyved a letter that my Lo. Thomas, and S<sup>r</sup> W. Woodhouse wer very desirous you sholde receyue withe all possyble speede, and they are very desirous you sholde send up an answere, and yf you send up yowr boye, thoughe the quene go in progresse, yet S<sup>r</sup> William Woodhouse will remayne at his lodging at Westminster this fortnighte. I forgot to write to you about the Parliament which is moste certeynly thought will be at Michilmas next, M<sup>r</sup> Litleton<sup>1</sup> that was condemned about my Lo. of Essex is neuely deade in pryson. There is a gentlewoman called M<sup>rs</sup> Anne Vauiosor is newly of the beddchamber, she was my Lady of Bedfords woman. Thus with my best commendacions I comitt you to God. This present fryday night late. [July, 1601.]

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 156.)

SIR,

I receyued a letter from M<sup>r</sup> Rogers only, looking for one eyther from yow, or yowr vndershreife: yet I thought you wer acquaynted withe the meaning therof. I haue trauyled, and taken great paynes about the benyfice,<sup>2</sup> thoughe dyuers laboured for it, and sought to crosse me. Yet by my frendes, and myne owne industry, my Lo. Keeper hathe bestowed the advousion vppon me to be dysposed by me. And in regarde I love yow, and of that

<sup>1</sup> John Littleton or Lyttelton, sat in Parliament for Worcestershire in 27, 28 Elizabeth, and again in 39 Elizabeth. The evidence against him of complicity in Essex's plot was very slight, but he was tried and condemned in February, 1601. Removed from Newgate to King's Bench Prison, Southwark, shortly after his conviction, he died there 25 July of that year, aged 39. His estates were regranted by James I. to Muriel his widow, and their son Thomas was made a Baronet in 1618.

<sup>2</sup> George Rogers was instituted to Bridgham, co. Norfolk rectory, 11 January, 1602, *vice* John Thakster, who died 9 September, 1601.

motion you made to me at London (hoping that you will take it very kyndly) I am willing y<sup>t</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Rogers shall haue it. And therefore I pray send him vp to me withe all possyble speede, and let him comme in handsome, and conuenient clothes fitt for his calling, and by gods grace I will take order he shall be presently presented into the benyfce. It is nowe in my power. His ordinary charges of Institution and induction will comme to vj or vij pounde. I remember M<sup>r</sup> Thaxter payde so muche, besydes my Lo. officer in that offyce will looke for some rewarde. Therfor yow must take order, he must not come vnfurnished. Ther was great offers made in that behalfe as I take it from some of your enemyes. And I can assuer you Mr. Waruer had letters to that purpose, but he made me beleife he wolde not meddle withall. Howsoever I thanke God I have prevented them all. I pray send him to my house with all possyble speede in suche order, as he sholde comme fitt for the place. The parlament is growing towards an ende. Good newes out of Irelande as you shall heare in an other letter when I have more leysure. I pray commende me to my good lady, your selfe, and my oncle Anthony. Yf yow had bene crossed in this matter you wolde have founde a great dyscommodity thereby. This friday morning [end of 1601].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 146.)

SIR,

I am exceeding glad I have so fitt and convenient a messynger, wherby I may suffyciently answer your letters and allso delyver myne owne opinion in reasonable manner. And fyrst before I write any newes I will playnely sett downe all suche procedinge, as hath passed about Bridgum. Fyrst I pray forgett not, you neuere spake of any to me but only of M<sup>r</sup> Rogers and that he was the only man you wished to supply that rome, your Undershreif in the lyke manner yeilded only to him, and stood fyrnly for him at our last parting. Uppon the fyrst neues of the death of

M<sup>r</sup> Thaxter I receyued a lettere from M<sup>r</sup> Rogers with a commandment from your selfe in his behalfe, and brought (by your owne man) which gave the greater creditt to the cause, and your man neuer made motion of any othere, neither receyued I any letter from you to the contrarye, nor from any of yours so that to conclude I made no more question, but that you stood still fyrmly for him, no more than I made doubt we were the sonnes of one Woman. And to deale playnly with you, then was the tyme if ever you ment to have any alteration, according to a parte of Matrimony, or els for euer holde your peace. For immediately after Muskettes departure I was driven to nominate the party, or els to loose myne interest in all, and according to yo<sup>ur</sup> owne dyrection (knowing nothing to the contrary) I made free choyse of M<sup>r</sup> Rogers to which my Lo. put to his hande. You sent me a formall bearded fellowe afterwarde with a letter to my Lo. whiche I stayde, In regarde you shold have wronged yo<sup>r</sup> selfe and my Lo. bothe, after it was too late too call backe yesterdaye. In my small acquayntance of him he is very malicious of his tounge and lookes into all mens faultes, but his owne, and as I have heard by straungers he is very lytigious with his neighbours therfore I take it as good lost as founde. I receyued no letters from yo<sup>re</sup> selfe, but one of Mum. Feltons tokens whiche he might easly gather from some others reportes. Lastly you writt to me about M<sup>r</sup> Daynes, when it was to late to pleasure him, for short shooting hathe lost all there game, but to come to the full peryod of the matter M<sup>r</sup> Rogers hathe the presentation whiche colde not be altered by any means, neither colde it stande withe my honesty to go about it. And theis were my reasons whiche induced me therunto the paynes he tooke withe youre sonnes my kinsmen, besydes the many lynes he hathe written in yowr bookes of memoriall and I thought that good turnes were fitter to be bestowed uppon him than uppon meare straungers you knewe so lately or nothing at all. If not let all desarte dye without just rewarde. If ther be of late a hole founde in his coote it is more than euer I knew or hearde of him neither are you but newly possessed with any synister opinion of his actions. It may be that mallice may prevayle

above vertue. If he be not I pray God make him worthy of the place. He wholly bwyldethe him selfe uppon your loue, and well wishing to him and came to me before Valiantes comming withe specyall commendations from your selfe and brought me your undershreifs letter. I writt to him, as a token it was wholly with his lyking. M<sup>r</sup> Jenkinson made little force of it affirming that his skole was very neare as good as the other. My Lady Bacon and her sonne who he sayde commended him to you, may very easly out of their owne bestowe somm good living in their owne gyfte uppon him and leave these small matters to other poore skollers. S<sup>r</sup> in a word, if I had understood yowre mynde in tyme I bothe colde and wolde most willingly have satsfyed youre request. But now according to the olde song Blame not my lute, nor me, but yowre selfe. Yet I have his woorde that he will ever be so servysable to yow, and lyue orderly, quietly and honestly amongst his parishioners. And therefore now as good make the best as the worst of the matter. And I do assure you He conseyuethe not the least unkyndnes in you but Imaginethe that he hathe had somm other crosse frendes. I knowe little newes but that the parlament endes to morrowe and I will gett yow a booke withe the fyrst. Ther ar fifetene hundred Spanyardes newly landed in Irland, Teron and his rebellious raskalls ar come towardes my Lord being tenn thousand men strong. Terons bastarde brother seruing of our syde is neuely committed for his wilde trechery. Vppon the last landing of theis Spanyards ther wer four skore of the fyrst that cam thether, made a brauado vppon oure men, but they wer all put to the swoorde being all full of cheines, bracelettes, crucifexes, and good store of Ducates in their purses. Our shippes haue fought withe Spanishe shippes, and they haue bene bothe shreudly beaten, yet our men haue taken two of theirs, and sunke one. The neuies of Ostend is very vncertayne, som saye it is lost, others say it can not holde out long, but howsoeuer as I heare bothe partes ar allmost weary, and the wantes ar great on bothe sydes mightely distressed. Valiant made great hast and was heare a Wedensday morning, and tooke me in my bedd. I have sent yow an other letter from M<sup>r</sup> Browne,

whiche I colde not conueniently send before. I meane by Gods grace to vysyte yow this Christmas. Your booke and your Inke shall be brought or sent yow. Thus with my most harty commendacions, etc. Thur[s]daye night [December, 1601].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 158.)

SIR,

I colde not chose but write by the mynister of Bridgumm, though I am coming my selfe withe all possyble speede towards yowr house. I doubt not but that the neue mynister of Bridgum will behaue him selfe bothe towards you, and all his parishioners, as that he will desarue yowr loves. He standeth precysly vppon youre fauor and goodwill more than of all the worlde besydes. I can assure you he passed my Lordes examyner withe suche specyall commendations to my Lorde as his Lordships holdes the benyfice very well bestowed. The newes of Irelande is not muche of late. Ther is a speache that their sholde be a great army sent ouer, and they saye that they make great preparation in Spayne to sende succour into Irelande. Sir Olyuer Snt. Jhon is newly come this morning out of Irelande, but the newes not yet knowen. I will bring the certaynty of it at my comming. I haue sent downe your booke by one Howe of Sudberry a carryar and a barrell of olyfes and a barrell of capers. I thinke they be as good as any be in London. I dare warrant you that ther is not such a paper booke in Englande. If you sende Valiant first to my cosin Foskewes that one of his men may go downe with him to Hone the carryar, you may have the thinges delyvered before my comming into the country. I have a box of a white wyar, and a roule for my Lady, whiche one Jhonson of Buckenam hath promysed to delyuer. Mr. Rogers will delyuer you a glasse of good redd Inke. S<sup>r</sup> I colde not by any meanes holde you in the subtedy. My Lo. with his owne handes struke all in England out. S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Lovell is in by the name of Esquire. I thinke it will be as ill as a purgation for I assure you he may not sytt. And what I did in the



matter, you shall knowe when I speake with you. You are still in the commission for the peace. Mr. Barcker put out, and Mr. Guybon newly com in. Thus withe my best commendations bothe to your selfe, my good Lady, and my vncke Anthony Gavdy, I committ you to god. This xiiij<sup>th</sup> of December [1601].

---

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804. f. 148.)

SIR,

I have bene this monthe in essex and suffolke to take the sweete ayre, but both before and often synce fame blewe into myne eares a wonderfull reporte of an extraordinary marriage you made for yowr man, wherof I was excedingly glad y<sup>t</sup> your credit proued so effectueall in so meane a matter. And in truthe, S<sup>r</sup>, In a cause of y<sup>t</sup> qualyty I think no gentleman of Englande was euer youre superiour or that euer I hearde did attayne to the halfe. I hearde of it at courte, in good places, In London at the best ordinaryes and other places ther besydes, in Essex at noble houses and other places wher I was, whiche I was willing to heare of withe great contentment, being wonderfull glad that youre country affordeth you so muche credit, and goodwill, whiche I take in some sorte to belong to my selfe comming of the selfe same father, and mother. To my country I am no way bounde, nor any whit beholding, that only gave me a bare byrthe, and nothing els worthe the remembering. I thanke God with all my harte you have found the contrary in bothe, and yet, S<sup>r</sup>, In the hyst of yowr fortunes I pray remember we wer made bothe of one mettall, and framed in one moulde, therefore let not the hardnes of your poore brothers fortunes eyther make him to be contemned or forgotten; some ways I must acknouledge my selfe to be as riche [as] any, in myne owne honest pryuate contentment. I will wryte you no neues, but that tis sayde my lady of Lester hathe marryed one of the playing boyes of the chappell. My wyfe, and my selfe are now at my uncle Nunnes, wishing you bothe your true hartes contente.

I know no cause but that I may very well come to see you, but at our last parting we agreed that I sholde send before my coming, bycause I wolde not haue any offence to groue of eyther syde, othewyse we may meete els wher. For In truthe I will not challenge you this yeare in youre oune house at any weapon. I have a writt to you from my Lady Willoughby about her ioyniture, whiche she thinkethe you will have a care to it very carfully. I will bringe it withe me. I have often writt, and sent to you, yet neuer had any answer, and take it very unkyndly that you writt it not to me in yowr mans marriage behalfe, bycause the wrenn sayde all helpte when she . . . in the sea. This with my best commendations bothe to yo<sup>r</sup> selfe, my good lady and my oncle Anthony Gavdy I committ you to god. [1602]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 160.)

SIR,

I cam this last night to Redgraue, wher I heard [yow] were, and was in good hoope to haue fownde bothe you [and] my Lady heare, for I was very desirous to haue sene you heare as one that loues you as dearely as any that lyuethe in this worlde. In truthe S<sup>r</sup> to deale playully with you, I am somewhat scrupulous In comming to y<sup>or</sup> house. I know not whether any miscreant greedy companion hath brought any thing to yowr handes agaynst me. I know precysly laste yeare there was not any thing at all that tyme agaynst me. If you haue any thing in yowr owne handes agaynst me I wolde be lothe to endaunger my selfe, and more yowr owne selfe, for I carry a mynde rather to do you any kynde office of true frendship, then to hynder you the valewe of one penny. If all be well and cleare, and that I understande justly so muche from y<sup>re</sup> selfe, I will very willingly see you to morrowe nighte. Every body is very hasty uppon me, thoughe I fynde very fewe ready to paye me, and I had as lyve adventure my mony to Ostend, as put it out to Barwicke unlesse his honesty wer the greater. S<sup>r</sup> If it be not fitt

I should come to you I pray sende me suche mony as is now due to me. In truthe my wyfe is now ready to ly downe and I fynde the charge therof very extraordinary, being altogether amongst strangers, trusting only to myne owne purse neyther must ther want that, whiche is now requisyte. M<sup>r</sup> Barwykes periury hathe made me the more earnest uppon you. First you know S<sup>r</sup> I lent you twenty pounds, whiche I let you haue in kyndnes, whiche now I wolde desyer you in the selfe same kyndnes to repaye, then the interest of fyfty pounce due long synce, the hundred and fyfety pounce I am content you shall still have and renewe the bandes, the interest of the hundered pounce I do allowe for Gryce. Then my rent commethe to xxxij<sup>l</sup> and a noble, whiche I must needes haue, then there was a bill of iij<sup>l</sup> ix<sup>s</sup> due to me, whiche I wolde gladly haue. I sent you downe a box of comfettes, and a fether. I know not howe you wer delt withall, but I am suer I delt both carefully and honestly in that matter, and sent it downe before the assyses, and yf yowr undershreif had come to me according to his promyse, you had had them at his comming downe. But I neuer harde of him after, and carryed down M<sup>r</sup> Barwicks bonde w<sup>th</sup> him, whiche I spake to him to haue lefte behynde that I might haue sued the bande last terme. I pray knowe in whom the fault was you had not the box, I am sure that the thinges wer well, and fittly prouyded for you, they camme to xvij<sup>s</sup> vj<sup>d</sup>. Besydes S<sup>r</sup> I hope you will not forgett the balinse you promysed me. In good faythe my wyfe borrowed xxx<sup>li</sup> of a kynsman of hers, which she payethe interest for only that necessary matters were to [be] supplied. Therefore I pray S<sup>r</sup> haue consyderation of yowr poore younger brother, that hathe very small reuenwes, but only happy and riche in a worthy vertuous louing wyfe. I want tyme and paper to reporte suche neues as there is. And yf I may not come I shall be sorry, and I pray keepe it to y<sup>r</sup> selfe, otherwyse I pray prouyde me suche sommes of mony as I haue sett downe in this letter. And heareafter as good shall make me able, you shall commaunde any mony I haue, as I thinke you haue had experience heartofore of my goodwill. I am presently to returne bycause of my wyfes entreaty. I pray write me two or three woordes whether I may conveniently

come or no. If not I pray remember the necess[ities] of the tyme. And so I do most hartely commende me in the best becomming manner I may bothe to you and y<sup>re</sup> bedfellowe. In haste fromm Redgrave. [1602.]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 150.)

SIR,

I stayd so long uppon your Undershreife coming up to London as I stayd my hand In writing suche newes, as was then currant. Nowe as the time affordedethe you shall fynde in theis few lynes following yo<sup>r</sup> Undershreif acquaynted me withe a letter y<sup>ow</sup> writt to my La Skydmore [? Scudamore] w<sup>ch</sup> I undertoke to deliuer uppon Sonday last at the courte wher this bearer Georg my oncle Anthonyes man was with me. I delyuered the letter into her owne handes, she red it and perused it, I satisfyed her my self as knowing of the matter, and what a care you had no way to be offensyve to her or her ffrendes. Therwithall she was excedingly well satisfyed, and pleased, And told me that indead she had written somewhat sharply to you. But now she was sorry for it and sayd that you wer old frendes, and that you wer one she had especyally loved euer, and you might at any time use her to do yow any pleasure. Ther hath bene great pressing of late, and straunge, as euer was knowen in England, only in London, and my L. Mayor and the rest of the Londiners have done so contrary to their Instruc-tions from the Lordes of the councell as this last sondaye your good frend M<sup>r</sup> Wade told me that their wer letters that day directed from the L. of the councell to S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Payton, and S<sup>r</sup> Jerom Bowes, with others to examyne the Londiners Indiscreat procedinges, and all suche as had cause to complayne shold be hard, and their causes redressed. So that vpon the Tuesday following their was a proclamation in London that no gentleman, or serving man shold any more be impressed, for the weake before they did not only presse gentlemen, and sarvingmen, but Lawyers, Clarkes, countrv men that had lawe causes, aye the Quens men,

knights, and as it was credibly reported one Earle, quight contrary to that the councell, and especyally my L. Cheif Justice intended. ffor their meaning was that they shold take out of all ordinaryes all cheting companions, as suche as had no abylyty to lyve in suche places, all suche as they cold fynd in bawdy howses, and bowling allyes, w<sup>ch</sup> they neuer went to any but only to the bowling allyes. All the playe howses wer besett in one daye and uery many pressed from thence, so that in all ther ar pressed fflowre thowsand besydes fyve hundred voluntaries, and all for flaunders. Ther was a Chesheire gentleman called M<sup>r</sup> Manwaring that hathe this three weekes expected to be a Knight, but both he, and all others besydes have myssed as yet their expectation. The Dunkerkers haue made two excellent new shippes both for fight and sayling, and haue lately taken two very good shippes of ours that cam out of the East countryes. Ther be great pryses come to Plimmouthe and great contention, and stryfe for the goodes, ffor M<sup>r</sup> Secretary and S<sup>r</sup> Walter Rawly ar on the one part, and S<sup>r</sup> Rob<sup>t</sup> Bassett, and M<sup>r</sup> Cole on the other, and the matter is to be decyded in the Admyralles courte, the first two hold w<sup>th</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Gilbert as parteners together. I thinke you haue herd how M<sup>r</sup> Bowton was kylled w<sup>th</sup> a knyfe by a little boy my Lord of Canterberries page being S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Wylfordes sonne, and the same weeke Bowton being M<sup>r</sup> fowlers brother. Cap. Hayes that was in the fleete about her and his most horrible bawdy, and beastly villanyes, he kylled an other prysoner w<sup>th</sup> a knyfe, for w<sup>ch</sup> he was hanged in Smythfeild, and two or three more were kylled that weeke w<sup>th</sup> knyfes. It was thought my L. of Hartford and M<sup>r</sup> Vice-chamberline shold have ben of the Garter, but ther was not any chosen. I was at the court when the frenche Duke<sup>1</sup> was ther, and on day he ware the value of fifty thowsand pound, a young man very vnhandsome, married to the Duke de Maynes daughter, heild though to be a gallant worthy gentleman, and of great reuenewes. Ther was besydes Count Gramaliell, a very exceding handsom man, and a

<sup>1</sup> Charles, Duc de Nevers, who married in 1599 Catherine de Lorraine, daughter of Charles, Duc de Mayenne, visited the Queen in April of this year

Marquesse who is brother to the Kinges old M<sup>rs</sup>, and his now new mystris, the rest ordinary frenche w<sup>th</sup> a company of lowsy pages. The old ffrenche Imbassador<sup>1</sup> hathe lately taken his leave and gone. This last weeke ther was an Irisheman called [marginal note "I haue forgott his name"] condemned of hy treason about most vilde and vndutifull speaches he spake agaynst her ma<sup>tie</sup> in Fraunce being heare taken and accused. I thanke god my wyfe is brought to bed of a boye, etc.

London this xij<sup>th</sup> of Maye [1602]

Ther is an Italian at courte that dothe wonderfulle strange trickes vppon the cardes, as telling of my card that is thought, or changing of one card from an other thoughe it be heild by any man neuer so hard under his hand. The Quene gaue him somme ij hundred crownes for shewing his trickes, and diuers gentlemen make diuers meetinges for him, wher he getteth somtymes xx<sup>ty</sup> somtymes forty crownes, and yet they say he spendes it so straungly, as he can not keepe a penny in his purse. And yet w<sup>th</sup> all his cunning he is heild to be but a crafty knave, and yet I thinke not so crafty as Barwicke the Jugler of Thetford for he hath Jugled my mony so cleane awaye, as I cold neuer in fower yeare see so muche as the Interest, but hathe turned all my mony into formall and abominable othes, and that is all I can heare of, but I will take order to dyscouer his periury, as well as the Italians knavery.

---

TO "THE LADY DOROTHY GAVDY" HIS SISTER-IN-LAW.

(Eg. 2804, f. 154.)

GOOD MADAM,

I haue so often trobled your Husband withe my letters, As I thought it fitt for varyety sake to addresse theise lynes to your best selfe, and the rather bycause I am desirous to shew my selfe kyndly seruysable to your best contenting humors, besydes I know your Husband and yow being two bodyes, yet framed of one mynde may easly particypate all secresyes the one withe the

<sup>1</sup> Jean de Thumery, Sieur de Boissize Ambassador since 1598. His successor was Christophe de Harlay, Comte de Beaumont.

other. And fyrst I will not dyscontent you with sending you two songes for the viall, that wer gyven me from a very worthy Musitian at Courte not doubting but shortly to bringe yow some better store. S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Lovell, and his sonne withe muche ado by my Lo. Admiralls meanes wer brought to kisse the quenes hande, the olde <sup>1</sup> blusshed most extreamly, and not without cause, for it is thought he strayned so harde for the favor, as it brought all the blood up in to his face.

Yo<sup>r</sup> oncle Bacons Daughter M<sup>rs</sup> Knyvitt was sworne the quens woman vppon Sonday last, and kyst her Ma<sup>ties</sup> hande, with great commendacion from her Ma<sup>ties</sup> mouth, that she was a very handsome, modest and a goodly woman. The newes of Fraunce I thinke is somewhat stale. Marshall Beron<sup>2</sup> and Count Auerne<sup>3</sup> ar bothe in holde. The Kinge is vp in armes, ther wer great treasons a bruig, and all not yet extinct. The King of Spayne a cheife Instrument in all, and his fynger was deeply in a great conspyracye latly intended agaynst the Kyng of Scottes, to haue bene performed by a fellowe that was Hix his man of Cheapsyde, and an Italian who cam not according to appoyntment. They two sholde haue murdered the king, but the other was taken and is growen madd synce his imprisonment. The Carick that S<sup>r</sup> Ri: Luson<sup>4</sup> brought home out of Lysbone Hauen lying before Snt. Jyilians Castle is valued to be worthe fwe hundred thousande pounce, and is cum vp to Porchmouthe. Atkynson<sup>5</sup> and his companyons sped uery hardly this day at starchamber, and thoughe he (by reason of his confession, and submyssion) sped somewhat better then the rest. Yet the other three had their judgment to ryde into Chepsyd with their face to the horse-tayle, ther to be whipped, ther ears to be cut of, ten thousand markes fyne, and to rowe in the Gallyes as slaues all their

<sup>1</sup> Blank in the letter.

<sup>2</sup> Charles de Gontaut, Duc de Biron, was beheaded 31 July, 1602.

<sup>3</sup> Charles de Valois, Comte d'Auvergne, implicated in Biron's conspiracy was pardoned.

<sup>4</sup> Sir Richard Leveson, or Luson, Admiral of the Fleet against Spain.

<sup>5</sup> Anthony Atkinson was accused and found guilty of publishing libels containing accusations against Lord Treasurer Buckhurst for peculation.

lyues. Ther is a great mortality at Ostend, and count Morrice dothe greatly annoye the Archdukes countrey. S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Parry<sup>1</sup> is immediately going ouer into fraunce. The Quene is going a progresse into the West Country. Thus with my best commendacions, etc. London this xxvij<sup>th</sup> of June [1602.]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 162.)

SIR,

I receyued y<sup>r</sup> Letter by Valyant and I will satisfye you in all poyntes according to yowr owne remembrance. Touching the putting you into the subsedy I have taken as sure order, as may be bothe for the putting in of your selfe and the putting out of the other directly by<sup>2</sup> . . . and so rest assured, touching the placarde for S<sup>r</sup> Nic. Bacon I will take order suffycient that yt shall cost you never a penny and I will not say I have one for him, only let him knowe my goodwill to do him any service ; touching the mony I have promyse, yf they holde, and dowbt not but I will effect it to the uttermost to y<sup>or</sup> best lykyng, you haue had experience of me heartofore that I haue not dallyed withe you in the lyke. I will send you a warrant very shortly and I will bring downe somme comfettes withe me when I come, whiche shall be by gods grace very shortly. The Courte sholde haue remoued as yesterday, and now it is apoynted vppon tuesday to Richmonde yf it holde. They do prepare the rolles for my Lo : Keeper to ly in by reason the small pox is in his howse. Ther was a great christning of the Frenche Embassadors chylde as yesterday, wher the quene was god-mother and my Lady Marquesse<sup>3</sup> was her deputye. The bankett was so great as it was reported that ther was a thousand banketing dishes. The only matter of marke that was besydes

<sup>1</sup> Sir T Parry, though appointed to succeed Sir T. Edmondes as Ambassador to France, and knighted for that purpose, delayed his departure so often that he incurred the Queen's displeasure.

<sup>2</sup> Torn at edge.

<sup>3</sup> Helena, widow of William Parr, Marquis of Northampton, and wife (1580) of Sir Thomas Gorges, Gentleman Usher of the Privy Chamber.



was that the chylde being a gyrlle was carryed and heilde by a man according to ther owne fashion. Ther is a notable trayterous Jesuite preist in Newgate that shall be shortly arraigned. What other newes [I have] I will very shortly bring downe myselfe. In the meane tyme I pray let me be recommended, etc.

London this present fryday [December, 1602.]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 164.)

SIR,

I haue sent my man this bearer of purpose to you for money, for I haue expected some from you by the carryar, but I hearde of none. If M<sup>r</sup> Barwicke eyther when he was in towne had heilde his woorde or his deepe othes, or yf he had heilde eyther of them when he was out of towne I neaded not to haue sent my man bothe withe troble and chardge. I fynde my Cosin Holdiche not far behynde in his woorde and promyse. I colde very willingly have forborne you till myne owne comming downe at owr Lady day, whiche is very neare, but that the necessyty of the tyme, and the care I haue of my wyfes well doing enforceth me to do otherwise, for she is now about a good peece of woorke. I pray God sende her good speede, she lookes her euery day and the chardge of suche matters is not unknowen to you and espycally the greater to us, lyuing in a straunge place, wher we are only driven to trust to owr selves. And it standethe me uppon in all honesty not to leaue her company till I see how god will deale with her in this busines. Therefore I pray S<sup>r</sup> without any exception sende by this bearer the fyfteen pounce w<sup>ch</sup> is due to my wyfe for the interest of her mony, for M<sup>r</sup> Grices mony you may satysfy y<sup>or</sup> selfe out of my annuyty, As I haue dully payde it hitherto euery yeare, thoughe God knows I am not ouerable, but I must thanke god for that small and pooer portion he hathe gyven me, hooping with patience to obtayne greater matters at his hande hereafter. I delt very carefully about y<sup>or</sup> busines of the subsedy, and sawe you<sup>r</sup> name put in before S<sup>ir</sup> Jhon Towneshends according to the olde booke which they will

not alter, and my Cosin Clypsbe Gavdy is comme in newly. I had a seale made whiche was not to my lykyng, but I will bring downe a better when I comm into country. Ther ar two new Bishopes made lately at Courte Do. Geggons,<sup>1</sup> bishop of Norwiche, and Docter Bennit<sup>1</sup> Bishop of Hereforde. No speache of Irelande but peace and tranquillyty, for Teron sholde come in vppon his pardon whiche I take it is sent him. Diuers Captayns and Leyftenantes comme out of the lowe cuntryes for newe supplyes of men, in regards their companyes ar weake. Ostend still beseiged withe out any thing done of eyther syde, yet the enemy hathe latly wonne a place called Wattingham Castle, but it is thought that yf Ostend be not releined this sommer, it will be in great danger to be lost. Diuers ladyes lately deade, my lady of Notingham,<sup>2</sup> whose deathe her Ma<sup>tie</sup> tooke muche more heavily<sup>3</sup> then my Lorde, my Lady Peyton<sup>4</sup> of the tower dyed the same day and about one hower. My lady Skott<sup>5</sup> whiche was somtymes my Lady Heyward lately deade. The newe electe serientes I thinke yow knowe, yf not theis they be. Foster, Tanfeild, Crooke, Couentre, Barker of the inner temple. Phillips, Nichols of the Middle Temple, Holton [Houghton] Hubbard, Harris of Lincolns Inn, Altum [Altham] of Grayes Inn of which eleuen Mr. Serient Harris made a iest that ther wer tenn byters and a barker, taking him for the weakest. Ther is greate reporte of a great riche pryse that Captayne Newport and Captayne Button sholde bring home whiche many doubt to be true. I can say little els at this present

<sup>1</sup> *sc.* John Jegon, Bishop of Norwich, and Robert Bennett, Bishop of Hereford were consecrated on the same day, 20 February, 1602 [3].

<sup>2</sup> Katharine, daughter of Henry Carey, Lord Hunsdon, wife of Charles Howard, Earl of Nottingham, died at Arundel Castle, 20 February, 1602 [3].

<sup>3</sup> The "heavy" grief of the Queen is attributed to Lady Nottingham's confession, as she lay dying, that she, by command of her husband, had withheld Lord Essex's ring which, intended for Lady Scrope her sister for delivery to the Queen, accidentally fell into the hands of Lady Nottingham.

<sup>4</sup> Dorothy, wife of Sir John Peyton, Lieutenant of the Tower, and in 1603 Governor of Jersey.

<sup>5</sup> Catharine, widow of Sir Rowland Hayward, wife of Sir John Scott of Scots Hall.

but that I desyre you earnestly to returne my man with all speed not empty, remembering the olde prouerbe (*Dominus opus Habet*). Concluding withall my wyfes and myne owne kynde commendations bothe to your selfe and my good lady wishing you bothe yo<sup>re</sup> heartes contente.

Your ever assured brother etc.

S<sup>r</sup> I pray let me entreate you that this proces herinclosed may be delyvered to the Undershreife, with a chardge from yow that he do his duty therin, and my Lady Willoughby will be very thankfull, and all fees shall be payde.

[End of Feb. 1603.]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 176.)

SIR,

You shall receyue a letter w<sup>ch</sup> I writt to my oncle Nunn wherein you shall briefly understand all the newes of this present tyme w<sup>ch</sup> I had not tyme to wryte of, only this moreover. I pray make suer w<sup>th</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Bacon that I may be burgesse of Aye, or in y<sup>or</sup> right for Thetford, for we shall haue a parlament<sup>1</sup> presently, and I speake in tyme hoping that you will respecte me afore a straunger. I will presently be in the country that I may prouyde myself agaynst the coronation to do my self some good hoping to fynde somme good frendes will helpe to set me forward. I pray commend me, etc.

xxv<sup>th</sup> of March [1603].

Yours ever assured, &c.,

PH. GAVDY.

---

<sup>1</sup> Of the first Parliament of James I., Philip was not, apparently, a member, though his brother Sir Bassingbourne was elected for Thetford. This letter, though the date has no year, must have been written the day after Queen Elizabeth's death. The coronation of James I. was on 25 July, 1603, and Parliament met 19 March, 1604. The writer was Member for Eye in the 1592-3 Parliament, for Thetford in that of 1597, and for Sudbury in 1601.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 166).

SIR,

I am so badly delt withall by all my creditors as I am dryuen to send into country agayne (though to my charge) for not any that I haue to do withall will pay, but M<sup>r</sup> Barwicke worst of all, and I did so rely vppon his wonderfull othes as I thought not to haue bene deceyved. If he had not fayled me we had bene well enoughe. I know not how yow ar furnished but yf yow can well spare it, my wyfe wold most willingly haue twenty pounce of yow for the christning of her chylde and many other charges, w<sup>ch</sup> be thinges must not be deferred. Touching this present newes I will breifly set it downe. The funerall was vppon thursday performed w<sup>th</sup> great solemnyty and reasonable store of moorners. My Lady Marquesse<sup>1</sup> was the cheyfe, and her trayne was carryed by M<sup>r</sup> Vicechamberline<sup>2</sup> and iii countesses. I saw all the ceremonyes performed w<sup>ch</sup> held some six houers w<sup>th</sup> the sermon, and I saw all the whit stauies broken vppon ther heades. The King hath made very many knightes, though of late he hath heild his hand, for he repentes him of very many he hathe made, and is very angry w<sup>th</sup> some Skotes, for he hath heard that they tooke mony for making of them. Cauillere Swyft<sup>3</sup> and his son,<sup>4</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Gargraue,<sup>5</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Thexton,<sup>6</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Foskews man, M<sup>r</sup> Turrett,<sup>7</sup> w<sup>th</sup> many others ar knighted of mucche lesse worthe. The King lyes to night at S<sup>r</sup> Henry Cockes,<sup>8</sup> and to morrow comes to Teboldes, whither the councell and lordes go this night to meete w<sup>th</sup> him to morrowe. He comes to London some fower or fyue

<sup>1</sup> The Marchioness Dowager of Northampton.

<sup>2</sup> Sir John Stanhope.

<sup>3</sup> Sir Robert Swift, of Doncaster.

<sup>4</sup> Sir Edward Swift, of Doncaster.

<sup>5</sup> Sir Richard Gargrave.

<sup>6</sup> Sir Richard Thexton, of co. York.

<sup>7</sup> Sir Philip Tyrwhitt.

<sup>8</sup> Sir Henry Cock, cofferer of the Household of Queen Elizabeth and James I., knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1591. His home was at Broxbourne, a few miles distant from Theobalds, Sir R. Cecil's house.

dayes hence. Ther goes to day towards the quene to wayte of her vj ladyes, my Lady of Worster, my Lady Kyldare, my lady Ann Herbert, my La. Riche, my lady Scroope,<sup>1</sup> and my la. Walsingham. My Lo. of Sussex, my Lo. Norris, and my L. Compton, w<sup>th</sup> diuers knightes and gentlemen. I am going w<sup>th</sup> all this greate troupe, meaning by gods grace to see his Ma<sup>tie</sup> tomorrowe, and then very shortly yow shall heare all the newes that I can learne. I supped yesternight w<sup>th</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas B[acon] and both he and my Lady and all the rest ar most horribly weary of their lodging, and yow haue lodgings of ix<sup>h</sup> for a monthe. I cold haue helped yow to better in a better place far for half the mony. Thus in hast with my best commendacions I commit you to God.

Your ever assured loving brother till death.

S<sup>r</sup>, I hoope yow will bestowe ij lyueries vppon me for my men.

S<sup>r</sup> Harry Cockes sonn M<sup>r</sup> Lucy,<sup>2</sup> Jhon Parker,<sup>3</sup> Warberton,<sup>4</sup> Leukener,<sup>5</sup> Brett,<sup>6</sup> Mompaston,<sup>7</sup> with dyuers others are knighted. Eppes the drinking fellowe withe some dosen more ar in Newgate, for that they pretended to fyre London in some places, and rifle it in others. My Lo. of Southhampton<sup>8</sup> is in great fauor with the King. Teron dothe offer vppon his othe to cleere my Lo. of Essex touching all matters wer obiected agaynst him concerning him selfe. I pray sende me somm mony yf yow can, and yf yow write to me, I will be ready to do yow any service I am able. [2 May 1603]

---

<sup>1</sup> Philadelphia, daughter of Henry Cary, Lord Hunsdon, wife of Thomas, Lord Scrope. It was to her that Lord Essex, after his condemnation, sent the ring for the Queen, which, falling into the hands of her sister, the Countess of Nottingham, was withheld from the Queen.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Edmund Lucy, of co. Warwick, son-in-law of Sir Henry Cock.

<sup>3</sup> Sir John Parker, of Sussex.

<sup>4</sup> Sir Richard Warburton, of Cheshire.

<sup>5</sup> Sir Lewis Lewkenor, of Sussex.

<sup>6</sup> Sir Robert Bret, of co. Devon.

<sup>7</sup> Sir Richard Mompesson, of co. Bucks.

<sup>8</sup> Henry Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton. For complicity with Lord Essex he was imprisoned in the Tower in 1599, but liberated three days after King James' accession.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 168.)

SIR,

I make no question but that you haue lately vnderstood all the newes by the Intelligencer M<sup>r</sup> Barwicke whom I fynde to be much fuller of newes then mony, for meeting him at Courte he fed me so full wi<sup>th</sup> newes, (and that not halfe true) as he is content to let me starve for want of monye. Besydes yow haue lately had S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Bacon comme downe, by whom you vnderstood suche newes as was knowne vppon y<sup>t</sup> Instant. I doubt not but that you haue heard of the multitude of Knightes made in many places, wherof our country hathe tasted pretly well. In truth it is sayde that many payd well for ther honor, (only our contrymen excepted who wer pickt out for ther vertues). Since the Kinges being at the tower he hath not made any, but vppon fryday last he made six, w<sup>ch</sup> were Docter Caesar,<sup>1</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Willbrome<sup>2</sup> M<sup>rs</sup> of the requestes, M<sup>r</sup> Edmondes<sup>3</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Wade<sup>3</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Smithe<sup>3</sup> Clarkes of the Councell, and M<sup>r</sup> Lake,<sup>3</sup> Clarke of the Signet. Vppon Sunday last he knighted my L. Maior<sup>4</sup> and M<sup>r</sup> Recorder,<sup>4</sup> who made an oration to the King, my L. Keeper answered him, and lastly the King himself did vtter a most worthy and wyse speache to the mayor and his bretheren. Vppon his comming backe from the chappell he Knighted M<sup>r</sup> Attorney<sup>4</sup> gracing him w<sup>th</sup> much favor. This last weeke ther was sworne at one tyme of the pryvy chamber six, my L. Eures sonne, S<sup>r</sup> Robert Carue,<sup>5</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Graye, M<sup>r</sup> Phillip Herbert,<sup>6</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Herry Bromley, and M<sup>r</sup> Olyuer Cromwell.<sup>7</sup> Vppon Sunday morning M<sup>r</sup> Wharton,

<sup>1</sup> Sir Julius Cæsar.<sup>2</sup> Sir Roger Wilbraham, of Cheshire.<sup>3</sup> Sir Thomas Edmondes, Sir William Wade, of Middlesex, Sir Thomas Smith, of co. Berks, and Sir Thomas Leake, of co. Derby, all knighted, 20 May, 1603.<sup>4</sup> Sir Robert Lee, Lord Mayor, Sir John Cooke, Recorder, Sir Edward Coke, Attorney-General.<sup>5</sup> Sir Robert Carey, afterwards Earl of Monmouth.<sup>6</sup> Brother of the Earl of Pembroke.<sup>7</sup> Sir O. Cromwell of Hinchinbrooke, uncle of the Protector.

my Lo. sonne, and S<sup>r</sup> Jeruis Clyfton wer sworne, vppon Sondag night S<sup>r</sup> Tho: Jermin, S<sup>r</sup> Edwin Riche, S<sup>r</sup> Edward Greuell, S<sup>r</sup> Thomas farfax, S<sup>r</sup> W: Woodhouse, S<sup>r</sup> William Cornwallis, and S<sup>r</sup> Charles Persey w<sup>th</sup> others to the number of fower and twenty englishe in all, and so many Scoche ar sworne, w<sup>th</sup> two gentlemen vshers wherof S<sup>r</sup> Drue Drury is one, and the tother a Skott. It is thought many payde deare, wherof I will take no notyce. My Lo: of Kinlosse is M<sup>r</sup> of the rolles. S<sup>r</sup> Jhon ffoskue [Fortescue] is out of the excequer, and the wardrobe, and is only Chanceler of the Duchye. The King hath placed in all offices some Skottes and put out many englishe, meaning to make vs all one vnder the name of ancient britons. S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Carue<sup>1</sup> hath a great losse for my L. Humes hath gott his place at Barwicke. My L. his brother yet lyveth thoughe very weake. The captayneship of [the] Ile of Wighte is gyven away to my L. of South[ampton]. Amptill<sup>2</sup> parkes ar gone, so that S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Carue is a very deepe dyscontented man. S<sup>r</sup> I tooke great paynes about yo<sup>r</sup> busines. I spake w<sup>th</sup> my L. Thomas<sup>3</sup> my L. Henry<sup>3</sup> and my Lo: of Northumberland, and besydes I haue now an especyall frend of the councell my L. Souche,<sup>4</sup> by whom I dare vndertake at all tymes to do yo<sup>w</sup> a good turne. I acquaynted him particularly w<sup>th</sup> the matter whensoever ther shall be any matter brought in question. And besydes I haue very effectually delt w<sup>th</sup> the Knight y<sup>or</sup> cosin Wade<sup>5</sup> who sayes that thoughe yow had not sent, nor I spake, yet all shold haue bene well on yo<sup>r</sup> behalf. So that assure yo<sup>r</sup> self all is safe and well, as yow can wishe, and besydes buyld vppon it, that whatsoeuer yow haue occasion to vse me in I will not fayle yow. S<sup>r</sup> my man told me that yow wold bestowe clothe for ij lyueries vppon me vppon the remembring of yo<sup>r</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Carey, Warden of the East Marches, etc., succeeded his brother as 3rd Lord Hunsdon, 9 September, 1603.

<sup>2</sup> Ampthill Park, granted to Sir Thomas Ereskine.

<sup>3</sup> Perhaps Lord Thomas Howard, created Earl of Suffolk, 21 July, 1603, and Lord Henry Howard, created Earl of Northampton, 15 March, 1604.

<sup>4</sup> Edward, 11th Baron Zouche.

<sup>5</sup> Sir William Wade or Waad, Lieutenant of the Tower.

busines. I pray send them vp by this bearer my man, and they shall be made vp as yo<sup>r</sup> lyueryes ar. And I will be thankfull for them, and requitt them some waye or other. S<sup>r</sup> your seale will be done this day, as Skipper can tell yow, which I shall delyver to Bolton, and I have bespoken yow a new booke which he shall have with it. This day is the Searjents feast, ther are iij men chosen M<sup>r</sup> Shyrley,<sup>1</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Snig<sup>2</sup> of the Middle Temple and M<sup>r</sup> Hutton<sup>3</sup> of Grayes Inn. I have vndertaken to helpe yow in your cause yow have with M<sup>r</sup> Turrett [Tyrrhwit] and I will take some paynes to bring it to some good passe, hoping you will not forgett my care therin. I shall have occasion shortly to wryte agayne when you shall heare further newes. The King is going this day to None-suche and to Otelandes to take the ayre for iij or fower dayes, he dyned in the presence vppon Sunday last, and was serued w<sup>th</sup> great State. My Lo: of Southa: was caruer, my L. of Effingham Sewer, and my Lo: of Shrewsberry cup bearer, my poore selfe carryed vp ij dishes to his Ma<sup>ties</sup> table. I pray let me be remembered most kyndly to my good Lady, and your good selfe hoping shortly to se yow both heare agaynst the coronation. All the xlviii that ar sworne of the pryvy chamber ar to wayte but twelve euery quarter, and els not to meddle, and it is thought that he will haue twyse so many more. [23-29 may, 1603.]

While I was writing your seale was brought which I have sent.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 219.)

SIR,

I protest of my faythe I haue bene very desirous to borrowe the mony you spake of, and I assure you of my knowledge from my mother her husbände<sup>4</sup> hathe put him selfe quight out of all

<sup>1</sup> John Shirley, Serjeant-at-law 1603.

<sup>2</sup> George Snigg, Serjeant-at-law. 1603, Baron of the Exchequer 1604.

<sup>3</sup> Richard Hutton, Serjeant-at-law 1603, Justice of the Common Pleas 1617.

<sup>4</sup> Philip's wife Bridget was daughter of Bartholomew Strangman of Hadleigh, co. Essex, and Maria his wife, who on her husband's death, in 1580, married Dudley Fortescue of Faulkborne, who would be the person here referred to.



mony, he hathe bene soccured from so many partes. My poore wyfe hathe but only one tenn pounce to carry up with her, and she seemed to be of great good will to helpe you with her myte. If she had not bene going up, she wolde haue sent you it, yf you can make shyfte till mydsummer or therabouts M<sup>r</sup> Foskewe,<sup>1</sup> and my wyfe bothe shall receyue mony, when I dare assure you, you maye commaunde a greater matter at eyther of ther handes, and thinke S<sup>r</sup> that I am more carefull to do you seruice, than any man in Englande, and what rekonynge soeuer you make of me, you shall fynde me moste honest and trusty till deathe. M<sup>r</sup> Foskew is gone up beforehande, and sendethe down a lytter. My mother, my wife and my selfe go up next weeke. It will be Thursdays this daye sennight before we be ther, I wolde not willingly haue Isacke come before that daye to London. And what you and I have deuysed and talked of shall not be forgotten. I pray either now, or when Isacke commethe up, sende me Just worde what assurance it is, that you haue from Grice, bycause I will looke to gett the rest. I forgott to know to aske you whether you wolde be in the commission for Suffolke this assises or no. S<sup>r</sup> N. Bacon hathe writt for nobody and his letters wer gone before by M<sup>r</sup> Mawe. If you will sende me worde, that you will deale but reasonably with me for my paynes, I will procure it uppon my credit & you shall not be beholding to S<sup>r</sup> Ni. Bacon, or any els. Thus with my wyfes and my owne best commendacions both to y<sup>or</sup> self and my good lady I commit you to god. Chilton this vij of June [1603],

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 174.)

SIR,

Thoughe I am presently comming into the countrey, yet considering how your man Herry Kendall commeth so fyty before me I colde not chose, but in true Kyndnes commend theise fewe lynes to your best and frendly censure. And fyrst I will make

<sup>1</sup> See note on previous page.

ansuer to the letter yow writt last, concerning my oncle Justice Gavdye I knowe it is a matter that commeth not neare his thought, for I vnderstood by his speaches that he dysdaynethe the manner of the making of knightes (as they are now made), and all gentlemen of worthe make a rydiculous iest of them, that bought it so dearly, and I know not of any more noted then those knightes of those two cuntryes. Besydes my oncle holdethe him selfe as he is farr better then any knight. I was at courte withe my cousin Henry Gavdy<sup>1</sup> vppon Sondag was sennight, wher at his fyrst comming S<sup>r</sup> W. Woodhouse closed with him, and offered him that for fyfty pounce he sholde be knighted (thoughe I knowe his creditt colde not haue done it) whiche my cousin vtterly refused, and by no meanes wolde so muche as lysten to it, and so they breake up. He was afterwarde offerd by a man that colde performe it and in great fauor withe the King, that he sholde presently be had into pryuy chamber, and then be knighted, and receyue great fauor from the King, without paying any one penny for it but only his fees. My cosin as sone as he went about cam his way to London, and wolde not haue had it for fyue hundred pounce. I fynde by him that he colde be one of the knightes of the bathe, and I thinke he wolde be content to pay somewhat roundly for it, wherin I commend him and his Judgment and in my opinion do the muche better then to be knighted after so many meane persons as latly haue bene. And for my Clipsbe Gavdy he made it very straunge to me, thoughe I hearde he went about it, but I think he wrought not by the best meanes. And this is all I can say till my comming. The newes that now is you shall knowe in my oncle Anthonyes letter, and the rest I will bring myselfe. Thus withe my wyfes and myne owne remembraunce, etc.

This present Wedensday [middle of 1603]

---

<sup>1</sup> Sir Henry Gawdy, of Claxton Hall, Norfolk, received the Order of K.B. on 24 July, 1603.

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 172.)

SIR,

The reason I haue withheild my hand from writing all this while was bycause I knewe that ther wer newes carryars that I saue about the courte comming home into Norfolke, and I colde then have writt no more then you sholde have hearde from them, and that had bene but lost labor. I am newly comme into country and suche newes as was at my last comming from courte I will acquaynt yow with. My Lo. of Rutland cam to the courte last weeke, and some knightes, and other gentlemen of the Kings seruauntes to the number of sixtene had cheynes gyuen them by the King with his picture hanging by to the valeue of some thyrty or forty pounce. All the rest had his picture only. The entertaynement was very greate they had in denmarke.<sup>1</sup> The King before he begann his progresse dyspached diuers ambassadors home, as the Denmarke, the Duke of Brunswickes, the Duke of Lorayns, the duke of Wittenberges, and lastly the Archedukes ambassadours, besydes the Ambassador of Venyce. Ther is now neuly a kynde of a petty Ambassador come from Geneua, and the Spanishe Ambassador is dayly looked for. My Lady of Bedford was carryed from the courte sicke vehemently suspected of the plage, the best they can make of it is a pestilent hott feuer. My Lo. Duke had a seruaunt dyed of that sycknes as it was thought, and he and all his kept ther chambers one whole daye after. Ther wer a number of worthy and very choyse knightes made vppon that great day, but with them (lyke cokle amongst good corne) a skumm of suche as it wolde make a man sycke to thinke of them. I haue heard yo<sup>r</sup> countryes of Norfolke, and Suffolke taxed, that ther wer Sheapreues, yomans sonns knighted, I cann assuer you ther ar other countryes ar not behynde them in that, and dyuers pedlers sonns of London haue receyued the same

<sup>1</sup> Roger Manners, Earl of Rutland, early in July, 1603, was sent to Denmark to act as the King's Deputy at the christening of the King of Denmark's son, and to present the King with the Order of the Garter.

order, amongst the rest Thimblethorpe<sup>1</sup> the attorney that was called nimblechappes full of the pox was knighted for seven pounce tenn Shillings. Captayne Burnell, and Grims my Lo. of Sussex his man had but bad fortune, for they wer bothe thrust out of the rome by the heade and Shoulders, and so lost their earnest penny. Little Cobb<sup>2</sup> scaped very narrowlye. Ther was suche exception taken for the place of somme of the meaner sorte complayned of to the king, as he hathe gyuen my Lo. of Worster authority by commission to marshall euery knight according to the place they wer in before. Ther was a question about the knightes ladyes of the bathe, but it is ouerruled they shall haue place of all other ladyes. I knowe one knight in Suffolke that followed the courte so long for a knighthood, as whether it wer for want of good lodging, or shifte of rayment, he and his men wer so lousye as it was most wonderfull, and yet in the end (paying well for it) he was made a lowsy K. Of those kinde of knightes ther be many Jestes bredd: as one that a knight coming to the dore being straitly kept by the Usher, he earnestly requested to comm in; the Usher asked him what he was, he tolde him a knight, the Usher answered him he must stay without, for ther wer so many newe knightes wolde comme in, as they sholde haue no rome for esquires. Another was this, two walking espyed one a farr of, the one demanded what he sholde be, the other answered he seamed to be a gentleman, no I warrant you, sayes the other I thinke he is but a knight, and many others which I will leave to write of. I saw Watson the preist when he was sent to the tower, he hathe discouered mucche, and especyally about matters in Irelande. He shall very shortly be arrayned. S<sup>r</sup> Patrick Barnwell and S<sup>r</sup> Garrett Elmes withe two other Irish lawyers ar committed about the petition they presented to the Councel about tolleracion of relygion and other matters; ther wer to the number of a fower skore attending vppon them at that instant. S<sup>r</sup> Richarde Fines is newly created Lo:

<sup>1</sup> Sir Edmund Thimblethorpe, of Norfolk, knighted 23 July, 1603.

<sup>2</sup> Sir William Cob, of Norfolk, knighted 23 July, 1603.

Saye.<sup>1</sup> The King hathe bene lately in great daunger by the meanes of a treacherous Skott. S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Kennedy hath married fayre M<sup>rs</sup> Bridges, and they say S<sup>r</sup> Jeames Hayes a Skott sholde marry my La. of Pembroke. It is thought S<sup>r</sup> Walter Raully<sup>2</sup> will cleare him selfe touching hanging worke, for my Lo. Cycill saide at fyrst that he was bedashed, but not bemudded, and yet the stabbing of him selfe with a knyfe sholde not well agree withe the other. Sir Jhon Tow[neshend] and S<sup>r</sup> Mathe Bro [? Browne of Betchworth] quarrel was very deadly, I am sorry the ground of it was no better. Sir, I am neuely come home to my Bidd and I have no leysure to write, we shall shortly meete, when I will rub up my memory to recorde such neues for haste I have now forgotten, etc. Chylton this present Thursday morning [early in Aug. 1603].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 225 )

SIR,

If I sholde tell you that I haue had a just occasion to be sylent, and holde my peace, you can partly gesse at the cause, my wyfe and my selfe haue lately had greate cause of sorrowe for the losse of an especyall frende, I praye god comforte us bothe and I doubte not but that he will rayse us some other newe good frendes, for y<sup>or</sup> selfe I make rekonig of you as of an ancyente, and suer frende, and one of the best frendes, that I haue in the worlde, I hope in god I shall endeouour my selfe to desarie it at yowre handes, and I rest assured that you make rekonig of me, as of the sonne of the self same honest father, and mother you had, and forgett not my lone estate, thoughe God hathe blessed you with farr hyer fortunes, whiche I haue euer reioyced at, and rest contented withe that portion God hathe prouyded for me. S<sup>r</sup>, I did

<sup>1</sup> Patent dated 9 August, 1603.

<sup>2</sup> This rumour of an attempt at suicide by Sir W. Raleigh is confirmed by a letter (4 August, 1603) from Cecil to Sir T. Parry, Ambassador at Paris. "When we were advertised, we came to him and found him in some agony, seeming to be unable to endure his misfortunes, and protesting innocency, with carelessness of life. In that humour he had wounded himself under the right pap, but no way mortally, being in truth rather a cut than a stab." (Edwards' *Life of Raleigh*, 1868, i. 375.)

not forgett yo<sup>r</sup> busines at london, as yf S<sup>r</sup> Will: Woodhouse be in the contrye he can tell you, and how often I attended on him about it. Yo<sup>re</sup> oncle Anthonye Bacon I fownde to do just nothing. S<sup>r</sup> William shewed him selfe very forward, and kynde in the busines, And a lyttle before my comming from thence I followed the busines daye by daye, and brought it to that passe, as I hope you haue the cause effected before this tyme, and so I was promysed by them, that were well able to performe it. I will assuer you yf it be not yet effected I will undertake at my nexte going within tenn dayes to performe it to yo<sup>re</sup> best lyking, by reason I haue learned somewhat more then I knew before, and In this and all things els you shall euer fynde me most willing to do you any seruice. I haue a lyttle business to dyspache whiche being done I will presently come ouer to Harling to visite you, and my good Ladye, to whom with yo<sup>r</sup> selfe, my oncle Anthonye and all the rest of my frendes I desyer that I and my Bidd maye be most kyndly recommended.

Chylton this xij<sup>th</sup> of August [1603 ?]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 232.)

SIR,

I can commende no neues at all to you worthe the writing, when I comme in place wher I will not forgett to acquaynte withe suche as the tyme present will yeilde, and remember all other suche busines, as you spake to me about. I haue sent my man of purpose for a bucke which importethe me muche to haue at this instant. I do not stande uppon it for the hyge fattnes, but suche as ther is, and the best he can kill will contente me, I pray speake to him in my behalfe, that it may be well serued and with youre allowance according to y<sup>or</sup> promyse, I will remember you in greater matter at London, whether after the Christning I will make all the hast I can. My wyfe and I bothe thanke you for my Cosin Fram[lingham] not forgetting to remember our selues bothe to yo<sup>re</sup> selfe my Ladye and my oncle Anthony.

Chilton this present thursdaye [1603 ?]

---

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 233.)

SIR,

I take it very kyndly that you did me the fauor to sende me my trunke, for my wyfe, and I camme wett uppon Christinas eve from Gavdy Hall, wher we were stayed one daye longer then we ment by reason of the foule weather. I acquaynted S<sup>r</sup> Clipsbe Gavdy<sup>1</sup> withe the letter about Winde, and with all the proceedinges, and he dothe allowe very well of yowr answer, and utterly dislykethe the manner of his dealing in the whole matter, S<sup>r</sup> Henry Gavdy<sup>2</sup> did the lyke in euery poynte, and rather more, and tolde me that it concerned him, and euery one els besydes of the same qualyty, and authoritye, and for myne owne parte I knowe thus muche that all soldiers or men of armes will utterly condemne him for a very badd managing of suche a matter. S<sup>r</sup> Clipsbe, and S<sup>r</sup> Henry bothe are of that mynde that he was sett on by others, and that it neuer proceded from himselfe, they saye they know him bothe so well. I spake with Samuel Birche, and he well understoode me, and tolde me little but sayde he wolde write to you by Crowsen, whom I kept all Christmas day bycause I wolde write you somme neuwes, which I colde not learne the fyrst nighte. What I can write of myne owne knowledge is this that in deade my Lady hathe bene very weake, and ill, and yet she cam forthe into the parler uppon Christmas day, and satt at dinner, and immediatly after dinner she went into her chamber, and fell presently asleepe, and this is all I can write nowe, I shall shortly haue occasion to sende to Harling, when you shall [hear] more. My wyfe, and my selfe are very muche made of bothe of S<sup>r</sup> Henry, and my Lady, Besyde all the straungers that are heare, is S<sup>r</sup> Henry Warner<sup>3</sup> and his sonne, and M<sup>r</sup> Byrches wyfe, the poticarye and this be all, thus withe my wyfes and myne owne best commendacions bothe to y<sup>or</sup> selfe my good Lady, and my Oncle Anthony I take my leau this present Christyde [1603 ?]

---

<sup>1</sup> Knighted 23 July, 1603.

<sup>2</sup> Made Knight of the Bath at the King's Coronation, 25 July, 1603.

<sup>3</sup> Knighted 23 July, 1603.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 235.)

SIR,

I purposed to haue come once to Harling before my going to London. But it hath pleased god to visite my mother with sickness, by reason wherof my determination was altered. She hath had a stockfishe Docter with her called Grimston, whiche I thinke hath done her neither good nor hurte, therfor she is determyned presently to go to London with all possyble speede to Doctor Paddy, who is exceedingly commended, and I doubt not but by Gods grace she shall do well very shortly, but she is fearefull, and therefore she seakethe cure the faster. She sent me to Bury to see, yf I colde haue got a lytter, but I colde fynde none, presently to returne to comforte her in her sycknes, that I am bounde in loue, and duty to do, in regarde she comforteth me and myne. I knowe not whether you go to London or no? But yf you do not, yf you will sygnyfye yo<sup>ur</sup> meaning to me by writing by this bearer, I will do any busines for you, you will commande me most honestly, and carefullie, And I will uppon my returne from London about the end of the terme come immediatly to Harling. And thus my best commendacions remembered bothe to you, and my good Lady I commit you to god.

In haste, Chilton [1603?]

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 177.)

SIR,

You wer wont to forbydd long preambles, therefore I will enter breifly into the matter. I was with the M<sup>r</sup> Attorney when S<sup>r</sup> Henry Warner did aske his counsell about Thetforde for yow. I hearde him make this answer; that yf they wolde choose yow, ther wolde be no exception taken, nor any refusall made. Bolton hath the warrant, and keepes it till his comming downe. I haue bespoken yow a hatt, but where is the monye. The King lay last night at



Whitehall, and is gone this day to Royston, he returne[s] next week backe by Theboldes to Whytehall. The Quene comes to Whitehall vppon Monday, and the yonge prince goethe to Otelandes, the parlament beginnes the ninteneday and the triumphe the xxv<sup>th</sup>. Ther is not lyke to be any peace betwixt Spayne and vs, but rather a flatt breaking of. The King of Fraunce hathe sent the King, the Quene, the yong Prince, the lordes and ladyes presentes of great valewe, and it is thought we shall haue peace withe the frenche shortly concluded. M<sup>r</sup> Raynsforde a grome of the Kinges chamber was drowned this weeke in a horse ferry boote, and all the rest of the company saued, in going downe to take possession of a thing the King bestowed vppon him. I can say little els but only desyer to be remembred, etc.

London this ix<sup>th</sup> of February [1604]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 179.)

SIR,

I know not what neede you shall have of a hatt, and therfore I have sent it doune of purpose by the carryar, I bespake it of purpose for I cold fynd none ready made, and the feather is fitting to the tyme. Your busines touching my Lo. of Suff. shall not neede as yet I thinke to be followed very hard but I have done suffytient whensoever the matter shall fall, and I have taken order bothe with Sir William Wade and his own Secretary to remember yow. I am coming my selfe downe with all speede. Ther is great preparation for the triumphe. Ther hath bene ij playes this shroftyde before the King and ther shall be an other to morrow. Twas false newes that my Lady of Essex was dead, for she is yet lyving and ther was no suche matter. My lady of Warwicke is deade.<sup>1</sup> Ther is newes lately comme that the

<sup>1</sup> Anne, daughter of Francis, 2nd Earl of Bedford, widow of Ambrose Dudley, Earl of Warwick. She died 6 February, 1604.

great Turke is deade<sup>1</sup> and that the Soph of Persia<sup>2</sup> hathe wonn a towne called Taurus and is lykely to preuayle further. The yonge turk is so yonge as it is thought he and all his kyndred will be put to deathe, and sett vp a new Emperour amongst them. In Barbary ther ar wonderfull warres betwixt two brothers, and very deadly, and yet the plage at this tyme so great besydes as it is not thought to be so in any place of the world besydes. Ther wer six gentle men charged this day for robbing S<sup>r</sup> Will: Cornewallys. The Knight whose name is S<sup>r</sup> Hue Losse<sup>3</sup> is fledd and one M<sup>r</sup> Tauerner is reprimed vppon her Ma<sup>ties</sup> letters. Seriant Heale<sup>4</sup> hathe brought him selfe in some daunger, and I do think he must make his peace w<sup>th</sup> his purse. That day S<sup>r</sup> Walter Raully was tryed the King demaunded of some one that cam from thence what newes, and he answered that ther was but one arraigned, and two condemned, the one for a traytor, the other for a foole meaning the serjeaunte.<sup>4</sup> I thinke Bolton can tell yow that I did somewhat with my Lo. Treasurer about an allowance for a bill, that was not worth ij rushes. I take it will desarve a kynd remembraunce. Your neighbors of Thetford are wonderfull shye for chosing of their burgesses. I wonder whether it be for ther wealthe or ther witt, for they are not so all wher. In truth they ar a company of collyars (?), considering what yow have desarved at ther handes. I know a poore yonger brother that had a free election for a place without the opposition of any one body. I spake with some of Thetford and they spake lyke coxcombs. I pray let all the rest of the thinges in the

<sup>1</sup> "Last night the Sultan (Mahomet III.) died suddenly without any preceding illness. It was kept secret. A solemn divan was ordered for this morning; and suddenly the new Sultan, Achmet, was seen seated on the Imperial throne, and by his side his father's coffin." Extract of letter dated 21 December, 1603, from the Venetian Ambassador at Constantinople. Vide *Calendar of State Papers, Venetian*, 1603, p. 125.

<sup>2</sup> Abbas I., the seventh Shah of the dynasty of Sofi (died 1628).

<sup>3</sup> Sir Hugh Losse, John Bowyer, gentleman of London, and Richard Taverner gentleman, of Gray's Inn were pardoned (14 March, 1604) for a burglary in the house of Sir William Cornwallis

<sup>4</sup> Sir John Hele (died 1608) acted as King's Serjeant at the trial of Sir W Raleigh. He was more notable (says Edwards in his *Life of Raleigh*, vol. i. 387) as a brawler and buffoon than as a lawyer.

box be delivered to my wyfe. Sir Arthur Hunningham nor my selfe shall not be knyghts for the shyre for we wer both at the Court at the choyse day. Sir Arthur followeth the matter for turne, and so makes that his coller for standing for the place. He told me he hath done muche good for his countrye. I will tell yow of more newes at my comming then I can now wryte of. The Queen hath fallen out greatly with my Lady Riche the cause you shall know hereafter. And so with my best remembrance, etc.

This Shrove Monday [20<sup>th</sup> Feb. 1604].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 181.)

SIR,

I have sent you the paper booke you so muche desyred, though withe muche ado I gott it. The proceedinges in the parlament haue bene little synce y<sup>or</sup> comming awaye only the matter about S<sup>r</sup> Frances Goddin.<sup>1</sup> Vppon the thursday the parlament was adiorned till Wedensday next in Easter weeke, vppon whiche day the Speaker was withe the king from eyght till tenn with that bill whiche you haue a cobby of. And then cam to the house, and tolde vs all how the kings mynde stode, and that in the afternoone we sholde be withe him agayne at the courte, wher he wolde haue the matter debated before himselfe, hauing all the iudges there. S<sup>r</sup> Frances Bacon was apoynted to speake, and so he did wonderfull well, the kyng afterwarde spake more then most excellently well; he was somewhat angry at first but afterwards the matter was pacyfied, and the king, and the house agreed bothe together to put them out bothe, and hathe gyuen our house autoryty to sende downe a newe writt for a newe choyse of neyther of them bothe. And so I thanke god we alle rest in the good fauor, and lykyng of

<sup>1</sup> This was a dispute between the King and the Commons respecting the election of Sir Francis Goodwin as Member for Buckinghamshire in opposition to Sir John Fortescue.

his ma<sup>tie</sup>, as I will tell you more at large this next weeke. I have not forgott yow to all suche as yow spake to me of. I pray make ready all my mony and my wyfes against my comming, and so with my best remembraunce, etc. this blessed good frydaye.

[6 April, 1604.]

---

TO SIR NICHOLAS BACON.

(Eg. 2804, f. 183.)

SIR,

Thoughe my penn hathe slept awhyle, yet my love and good affection towards yow is everlyving, And I hope you will beleve that I can not forgett so honorable a frende as I have euer heilde you to be. I doubte not but that yow haue harde of a great controversye in the parlament house betwixt S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Foskeue,<sup>1</sup> and S<sup>r</sup> Francis Goddin, whiche is nowe determyned, for vppon Thursday last the matter being harde before the King, and the iudges being by, they ar bothe put out of the house, and a writt sent downe to electe a newe. The parlament that day was adiorned till Wedensday in Easter weeke. Ostend is greatly dystressed, thyrty or forty slayne in the towne every daye, they haue had three gouerners slayne within this monthe, and yet ther is newes newly come that they haue slayne xij hundred of the enemyes, and whensoever the enemy shall enter the towne they doubt not but to make good shyfte with them, for it is thought that the towne is well manned. A Skocheman comming from grenwiche to London kyllled the waterman that brought him very beastly running his rapier into him. M<sup>r</sup> Churchyarde,<sup>2</sup> the poett is lately deade, and not paste a fortnight before his deathe being in a payre of loose gascougnes,<sup>3</sup> being harde by the maydes of honor he shott

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* note on preceding letter.

<sup>2</sup> Thomas Churchyard, poet and miscellaneous writer, author of *Churchyard's Chipps*, etc.

<sup>3</sup> Gascoines, or Gally-gaskins = wide loose trousers (Halliwell).

of his peece, and all the powder rann downe vppon his stockings, dryue away the maydes and all the company, and was faynt to be carryed out. Ther is a very gallant Ambassador expected out of Spayne. I meane very shortly to wayte vppon yow at Redgrave when yow shall heare some further newes, not forgetting my best remembraunce to your selfe, my Lady, S<sup>r</sup> Edmunde and his lady.

London this present Good Fridaye [6 April, 1604.]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 170.)

SIR,

I was very glad I had so good an occasion to write, as I now have by this bearer Captaine Crompton my especyall good frende whom I haue longe knowen to be an honest man, and most worthyly suffycient of that place, wherin he is now employed. He hathe the Councelles letters for the leuying of voluntary soldiers in the countyes of Norfolke and Suffolke, as dyuers other captaynes haue in other countryes. In whiche busines he is to vse the fauor of the best in the country of whom I holde yow not inferiour to any. I pray S<sup>r</sup> for my sake ayde him, and further him in this his busines, as much as you can conueniently withe your creditt in that country, wherin yow shall do god, the king, and the country good seruice to ridd the place of the most lycentious and idle company in all the countrie. I haue not remayned long heare, neyther have I yet bene at the courte, by which meanes I can not possesse you withe so muche neues, as hereafter I shall have occasion to acquainte yow withe. Ther is a speache of a marriage betwixt my Lo: of Den-shyre,<sup>1</sup> and my Lady Urbella and about my Lo. of Arrundell<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Charles Blount, Earl of Devonshire, married in December, 1605, Lady Penelope Devereux, divorced wife of Robert, Lord Rich. This report of a marriage between the Duke and Lady Arabella Stuart is extremely improbable, as it was well known what the relations between him and Lady Rich were at this time.

<sup>2</sup> Thomas Howard, Earl of Arundel, married in September, 1606, Lady Alatheia, daughter of Gilbert, 7th Earl of Shrewsbury.

and an other lady in the Court but what will fall out in eyther of them bothe I can not certeynly certyfy yow. Stone was knighted last weeke, I meane not Stone the foole but Stone<sup>1</sup> of Cheapsyde. The kinge was at his house at Layton. S<sup>r</sup> Henry Bromley hath gotten a great marriage lately in London. Captayne Crompton can enfourme you of all such newes as is now stirring for he hath bene long about courte. I can assuer yow yet no newe lordes, nor as some thinke will be none. Yow shall shortly heare of me, when I will not forgett any busines you have put me in trust withall. The parlament goes on, and the house was in great danger this other day to be called. Thus with my best respects, etc. this xvij<sup>th</sup> of June [1604.] [ 1604 ]

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 195.)

SIR,

I have had more care about provyding to send doune those thinges whiche you shall receiue in the trunke, and taken more paynes then ever I did for the tyme in my life, neyther will I heereafter vndertake to do any thinge in so shorte a tyme, though I will never refuse to do yow any kynde servyce as you know yow have allwayes, and shall ever commaunde me. I have sent you downe the kye of the trunke, wherin yow shall fynde two rappers, two daggers. I hope they will lyke my cosins well, for yf I had not got them made by specyall fauor, I had not got any at all, nor any weare so good. Ther be two payre of hangers, ther is the booke of the turkish hystory. I haue sent downe a glasse to my lady, I thinke as good as good may be for in fower howers searche I colde see none lyke it, all the woodworke is ebeney euery parte, and a dimounte cutt glasse. I haue sent you besydes three feathers. If all these thinges be to your lyking I shall be very glad therof, my wishe is it sholde be so. In any other busines I will not forgett yow, that yow spake of, the

<sup>1</sup> Sir William Stone, of London, knighted 16 June, 1604.

neues that happened synce Sir W. Barwicke's comming is that vppon Sondag last Docter Sharpe was sent to the tower close prysoner the cause not dyrectly knowen, but for treason, and supposed that he hathe done very ill offyces betwixte the king, and his Lordes. The king is gone to Chattum to see his shippes, and vppon thursday commethe to London, the parlament making an ende as vppon fryday or Saterdag for this session. This night a hundred of the best of vs of the parlament howse make a great supper at Marchant Taylers hall gyueng euery one tenn shillings a peece, and the king hearing of it hathe gyuen vs a brace of buckes to the supper and sent in besyds a hogshed of wyne. My Lorde of Penbroke is marryed to my Lorde of Shrewsberrys eldest daughter. She shall haue three thousand pounce lande (?) My lady North is marryed to a Skoche knight. I shall have more leysure to write yow more newes shortly, or els I will comm to Harling to reporte it my selfe. And thus withe my best remembrance to your selfe and your lady I take my leave, this present tusdaye <sup>1</sup> [3 July, 1604].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 185.)

SIR,

I do not doubte but that yow receyved my lettres by Webbe and yowr lace from the sylkman, now yow shall receyve the trunke withe the rest of the thinges beforenamed, and suche neues as the tyme present will afforde I will breifly recyte. The parlament ended for this session vppon Saterdag last, and is proroged untill the vij<sup>th</sup> of februarye; The king cam to Whitehall vppon Thursdaye last, vppon Sondag night he went to Otelandes, and returneth vppon tuesday, and very shortly beginnethe his progresse towards Northamptonshyre. I writt to yow

<sup>1</sup> The date of this letter must be 3 July, 1604. Parliament was prorogued on Saturday the 7th. The King surveyed Chatham Dockyard on the 4th. The date, however, of Lord Pembroke's marriage with Lady Mary Talbot is given in all Peerages as November 4th. The writer, however, repeats the statement in the next letter.

that my Lo: of Pembroke had marryed my Lady Mary and now my Lo. Dauers<sup>1</sup> shall marry her sister my lady Alathia. For my lord of Arrundell<sup>2</sup> his marriage it hanges betuene the eyleedes, for some say he is and some say he is not marryed. It is thought very fytt and conuenyent that euery man now sholde marry within his owne element. M<sup>r</sup> Speaker<sup>3</sup> made a speache to the king sauoring of flattery no more then good porridge dothe of hearbes and ottmeale. The kinge spake most admirably wysly (as I neuer hearde him speak otherwyse). Lastly my Lo. Keeper concluded all, whose speeches tasted somewhat of M<sup>r</sup> Speakers porredge. But lastly he spake in generall to all Justices of peace that wer now going into country, of w<sup>ch</sup> ther wer two kyndes he founde great fault withall, the one wer suche as go downe into the country, and presently fall to hawking, and other sportes, and yf any man comme about Justice, they sende him to their next neybur Justice; the others be suche as put downe one alehouse, and set vp two for it, set vp one constable, and put downe an other, and yf any matter be stirring whatsoever he must haue an ore in it, and this Justice of peace my Lo. sayde was able to keepe a whole sessions. All suche lawes as bothe the vpper and lower house had agreed of bothe publicque and private wer confirmed by the king, saue only three, the statute for golde, and syluer lace, the othe of the supremacy for all suche as heareafter sholde be restored in bloode, and a statute that was made about the measuring of ootes. As sone as the booke of statutes shall be prynted I will buy it for you. The great ambassador of Spayn is dayly looked for, and peace lykely to be fymely concluded, and other matters motioned besydes. I haue had very ill lucke for this last weeke. I had bought three feathers w<sup>ch</sup> wer made of purpose, and not being put vp into the trunke I lefte them in a place wher they wer stollen and for my lyfe I colde not gett three newe to be sent downe, that wer so good as I wolde buye for you, but agaynst my owne comming downe I will gett somme, and bring them downe. My Lo: Mayor was at courte vppon Sunday last wher two

<sup>1</sup> Henry, Lord Danvers, died unmarried.

<sup>2</sup> *v.* Note on p. 145.

<sup>3</sup> Edward Philipps.



of his brethren wer knighted. The king made very neare thirty knightes at Chattam<sup>1</sup> I did not heare of any Lordes the king made neyther is it thought that he will in haste. I pray let me be remembred, etc. London this xj<sup>th</sup> of July [1604].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 187.)

SIR,

I haue had no small care about all your businesse, which I will breiffly relate, and then somm neués of the tyme present, and so an ende. Your letters to my Lady Bartlett and her sonne, they ar neyther of bothe delyuered. They ar at a place called Eshill in Surry. They ar expected very shortly at Barbican, when I will bothe delyuer the lettres, and have an answer. The letter to my lo. Cheife Justice I have delyuered, who was then sycke, and hathe bene so this fyue or six dayes. I have hunted out M<sup>r</sup> Morris as a man sholde hunt out a mouse, and at last founde him out at his masters house. Your busines is not donne, but he makes no doubt but that it shall be very shortly. M<sup>r</sup> Kerry hathe bene so sycke, as he was not able all this whyle to go to the courte. I have spoken to M<sup>r</sup> Kerry my selfe, and I will assuer yow y<sup>t</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Kerry vndertooke the matter fyrst for my sake, and so M<sup>r</sup> Morris did confesse to me him selfe, and that he wolde have done it, thoughe he had never medled withall. The newes breiffly is thus, Seriaunt Heale, is fyned at a thousande pounce commytted to the fleete and sequestred from being the K. Serieante. The quenes brother<sup>2</sup> is shortly expected, and great prouysion made for him. The yonge Duke<sup>3</sup> I haue sene, the weakest and sparest chylde of his yeares that euer I sawe one of them. I kyssed his hande. I pray god blesse him

<sup>1</sup> This was on 4th July.

<sup>2</sup> This was Alric, Bishop of Schwerin and Schleswig, Duke of Holstein. He arrived early in November, and was invested with the Garter 24 April, 1605.

<sup>3</sup> Charles, Duke of Albany, afterwards King Charles I. Sir R. Carey in his Memoirs says at this time, "The Duke was past four years old . . . He was not able to go, nor scant stand alone he was so weak in his joints, and especially his ancles, insomuch as many feared they were out of joint."

and strengthen him. S<sup>r</sup> George Snelling commytted a fowle murder vppon one Mr. Haslerig, the originall of the quarrell was bycause he married one to whom he was a sutor, he fled, but it is sayde he is taken. My Lo. of Canterbury<sup>1</sup> is not yet inuested in his place, but his conge de lyra is gone downe now to Canterbury. Docter Vahounde shall haue his place. Neyther Earles, Dukes nor barrons yet made, thoughe a speache that ther sholde be of all three, whiche I shall more ceyrteynly bring you downe worde of. S<sup>r</sup> Phillip Herbert<sup>2</sup> shall marry my Lady Susan Veare, and S<sup>r</sup> Richarde Gargraue my cosin Elizabeth Southwell, and it is thought my Lo. Willoughby<sup>3</sup> dothe fauor well my cosin Gargraue the mayde of Honor. Ther be xxxj commysioners of Skotland, wherof the Lo. Chanceler, the Lo. Constable, and the Lo. Marshall ar three, and one Lerde, that is ij fyngers hyer then S<sup>r</sup> Jerome Bowes. My oncle Judge hathe bene nomynated to the lo. cheife Barous place, thoughe I thinke it will fall out now otherwyse, for S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Crooke, and M<sup>r</sup> Solycyter<sup>4</sup> offer fayre, and they say that Serieant Heale for all his dysgraces hathe offered his spoke to the carte, and that a good fayre one. The proclamacion will tell yow the newes of it the selfe in the conuntry. All the costimers places in Englande shall be called into the Kings handes and my Lo. of Cranburne sholde hyre them of the king, w<sup>ch</sup> will bring him a wonderfull revenue more then euer he had, or any thing before him. And thus with my best remembrance to yo<sup>r</sup> self, and my Lady. Wishing bothe yo<sup>r</sup> best fauors towards my sweete Bidd : and little Blockheade, I take my leaue.

this xxiii<sup>th</sup> of October [1604].

---

<sup>1</sup> Richard Vaughan, translated from Chester to London, 24 December, 1604, to fill the vacancy caused by the translation of Richard Bancroft to the see of Canterbury.

<sup>2</sup> Brother of the Earl of Pembroke. He was privately contracted to Lady Susan, daughter of Edward, Earl of Oxford, on 12 October, 1604.

<sup>3</sup> Robert Bertie, Lord Willoughby of Eresby and (1626) Earl of Lindsey, married in 1605 Elizabeth, daughter of Lord Montague.

<sup>4</sup> Sir Thomas Fleming, Solicitor-General, was appointed Chief Baron of the Exchequer 27 October, 1604.

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 189.)

SIR,

The occasion of my now writing is in regarde I mett withe M<sup>r</sup> Roger Barwicke at the courte in the présence and he tolde me directly that betymes in the morning he wolde go into the contrye, and that he had occasion to go to Harling to yow, and safely to delyver such thinges as I sholde sende downe by him. First I know not what neede yow haue of y<sup>or</sup> Plaster, M<sup>r</sup> Pitchforke made it for yow of purpose, ther is iust viij ounces and he sayes that ther is no better to be had. I was very carefull that my Lady sholde haue her superfyne sylver, and her sylke. She did not iustly tell me what kynde of sylke, but I haue aduentured of Sleue sylke. The sylke and syluer wer bothe bought at Hinshaws. If my Lady eyther myslykethe eyther the syluer or sylke it shall be chaunged but I hope it shall not neede, for I haue a great care to please her, no whit doubting but what she will accepte of my goodwill, for I was allwayes willing to do her any pleasure, and kynde service. I make no doubt of a just requitall. My oncle Justice Gavyd was sent for this day to the courte, and by my Lo: Tresorers meanes he was brought to the King. I saw him my selfe. The King wished him not to be dyscontented in regarde of the place of Lord Cheife Barron whiche was partly promysed him, for he ment to resarue him for a better place when it sholde happen.<sup>1</sup> In the meane tyme S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Flemming shall haue the place. I haue promysed by M<sup>r</sup> Morryes that you shall haue an ende of your busines this weeke. I have nothing els to saye now but I pray let me be very hartely remembred to your good selfe, my lady, my oncle, but lastly and most sweetly to my S<sup>t</sup> Bidd whom I pray tell (yf I might heare but once from her) I wolde make all the speede possyble I colde downe. I neuer more desyred

<sup>1</sup> Sir Francis Gawdy was appointed Lord Chief Justice of Common Pleas 25 August, 1604.

to be withe her in my lyfe. I forgett not Franke. I pray God make a muche honester, and richer man then his father.

This xxviii<sup>th</sup> of October [1604].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 191).

SIR,

I have bene very carefull of your busines that I had to speake with M<sup>r</sup> Morris and as yet nothing is effected, and now he sayes ther can be nothing done till S<sup>r</sup> Charles Cornewallys commes to towne, when bothe he and M<sup>r</sup> Kelly will joyne together, and make no doubte but to bring it to a good ende. I have gone often enoughe, and labored most earnestly withe him in the matter, he hathe promysed me very dyrectly, that this weeke you shall heare from him by lettres when you shall vnderstande how all matters will go from him selfe. Uppon Simon and Judes daye S<sup>r</sup> Edwarde Denny was made Barron of Waltham. The daye following S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Flemming was made Lo: Cheife Barron. Serieant Doderidge<sup>1</sup> Sollicyter, and Serieant Foster<sup>2</sup> in his place, the Princes serieant. The Shreifes wer pricked vppon Sondag last. S<sup>r</sup> Henry Spilman for Norfolke, M<sup>r</sup> Buckenam<sup>3</sup> for Suffolke. We heare that my Cosin Phillip Knyvett hathe marryed a gentlewoman vertuous, but not very riche. I thinke yow knewe it before my selfe. I hearde one M<sup>r</sup> Gosling sholde marry them, but I heare S<sup>r</sup> Tho. Lovell, and other of his frendes ar not exceedingly well pleased therwithe. The King goeth not towards Royston yet this tenn dayes, the weather is wett. The Vnion goethe not currently ther is very harde holde euery day about it, bothe when they sytt and [at] the courte. I stode this last Sondag harde by an olde M<sup>rs</sup> of yo<sup>rs</sup> My La. Rawly, who withe her sonne wer petitioners to his Maiesty, but he wolde no way respecte them, nor so muche as

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Doderidge, Solicitor-General, was raised to the Bench 25 Nov., 1612.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Thomas Foster, Counsel to Queen Anne and Prince Henry, was raised to the Bench 24 Nov., 1607.

<sup>3</sup> Edmund Buckenham.

looke towards them. I sent downe thinges long synce to yow by Mr Roger Barwicke, whiche if they be not delyvered I have the more wronge. I pray let this letter inclosed be delyvered to my Lady Gavyd about her owne Busines. I desyer most earnestly to come to Harling, when I will bring you all the neues. I was never wearyer of this place in my lyfe. As I can get a convenient messynger you shall heare more. And so with my best remembraunces to your good selfe I take my leave.

This 15 of Nonember [1604].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804. f. 193.)

SIR,

I am sorry for yo<sup>r</sup> heauynes. I do not doubte but that God is stronge enoughe to comfort yow and I am glad yow haue so good a cause to comforte y<sup>or</sup> selfe. The first neues I hearde of the matter was uppon monday night and the next morning I went to my cosin George Gavyd, and he was gone betymes sent for by his father. S<sup>r</sup> I do not doubt but that in the height of your fortunes yow will now remember y<sup>or</sup> poore brother, and his chyl dren, and I hope yow will not forgett y<sup>or</sup> promyse in tyme of y<sup>or</sup> shreualtye and diuers other tymes that yow wolde do me somme good, when this tyme sholde comme. Yow know I haue bene all wayes a true faythefull louing brother to my abylyty, and willing to do yow any servyce and so I will be during lyfe. I spake with Mr. Morrys, and he sayes, yf yow had not followed the matter so harde, he wold have done it him selfe, but now ther is no hope. I will bring downe the thinges from him. I had wyne ready to come, and filled, and the morning hoysing it to go to the carryers, the heade of one of them flewe it, so as the fellowe hathe lost very much, and I was constrayned to get my wyne in an other place, whiche I colde not conveniently gett to the carryars to comm downe now this tyme, but the next weeke shall be as good, and by Gods grace it shall not fayle but comm

downe, and my selfe immediatly within this two dayes. Ther is a newe proclamacion about coyne come out which I haue sent yow hearinclosed. The Kinges going to Royston is no neues. The Duke Vanholt<sup>1</sup> is feasted euery day in a seuerall place, and what meate soeuer they haue they do not forgett to drinke harde. The commyssioners for the Vnion<sup>2</sup> (*sic*) sytt not past to-day, and to morrowe, and so they make an ende whiche I will bringe yow worde of my selfe, and yf Mr. Evans haue anything worthe the getting I will bring it downe with me. I haue not forgott Mrs Evans, and let her rest satysfied, for all is well. My Lady of Huntington is yet at Islington, but this weeke she commes to Drury Lane. Ther is a newe lotary at Sommerset howse, wher ther be more fooles bayted euery daye hen ther be hearings taken at Yarmouth. . . . this xx<sup>th</sup> of Nouember [1604].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 197.)

SIR,

I haue no tyme to be tedious. Bolton and Isacke can relate you muche neues, the neues of the courte is this. I was at courte vppon Satterday last wher in the hall wer created theis lordes, whiche I sawe withe myne owne eyes. M[y] Lo. of Cramburn<sup>3</sup> Earle of Salusbury. My Lo. Burleigh<sup>4</sup> Earle of Exeter. S<sup>r</sup> Phillip Herbert<sup>5</sup> fyrst made Lo. Herbert and instantly Earle of Mungommery. My Lorde Sydney<sup>6</sup> Viscount Lyle. S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Stannop<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Probably the Queen's brother is here referred to, the Duke of Holst or Holstein. *Vide supra*, p. 149.

<sup>2</sup> The Union of Scotland and England.

<sup>3</sup> Robert Cecil, Viscount Cranborne, created Earl of Salisbury.

<sup>4</sup> Thomas Cecil, Lord Burghley, created Earl of Exeter.

<sup>5</sup> Sir Philip Herbert, created Baron Herbert of Shurland and Earl of Montgomery, succeeded his brother as Earl of Pembroke in 1630.

<sup>6</sup> Robert Sydney, Baron Sydney of Penshurst, created Viscount Lisle.

<sup>7</sup> Sir John Stanhope, created Baron Stanhope of Harrington.

Barron. S<sup>r</sup> George Carew,<sup>1</sup> Counte Arundell,<sup>2</sup> and M<sup>r</sup> Willium Cauendishe<sup>3</sup> the last barron. My Lo. of Salusbury did make a most excellent speache at the creation. The sonday following a stately and royall Christning,<sup>4</sup> as was sene in many yeares before, whiche I sawe all performed. My Lo. of Canterbury in his cope did christen the chylde with great solemnyty. The Duke of Holst,<sup>5</sup> my Lady Urbella, and my Lady of Northumberlande wer gossypes, the name Mary. It will aske a weeke to descrybe all the rest, whiche I will performe my selfe this weeke by worde of mouthe at Crowes Hall, wher I am wonderfull glad to heare that you ar all so well pleased withe the place, whiche makethe me long the more to see it. The King hathe bene all this weeke at Nonesuche. Dyuers knights looked to haue bene made this christining, but it fell out otherwyse, ther was not one made. Ther hathe bene a mighty great cause hearde about S<sup>r</sup> Rob<sup>t</sup> Dudley's legytimation in the Starr chamber, and ther dysmyssed and referred to the lawe. S<sup>r</sup> Rob<sup>t</sup> had the worste there. Ther is reporte that somme sholde dy of the plage in my Lo. Admyralls shippes. I shall learne more newes a Sonnday at Courte, whiche I will bring downe, and be the reporter of it my selfe. I pray let me remembred in the best manner to your good selfe, and your Lady, wishing myselfe often ther by reason of my Bidd for when I do greatly thanke you for vsing so kyndly. London this xj<sup>th</sup> of May [1605].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 199.)

SIR,

I pray let me fyrst entreate yo<sup>r</sup> fauor not to take any unkyndnes In that I camme not to Cambridge, for my busines

<sup>1</sup> Sir George Carew, created Baron Carew of Clopton.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Thomas Arundell (created Count by Rudolph II., Emperor of Germany, 1595), created Lord Arundell of Wardour.

<sup>3</sup> W. Cavendish, created Baron Cavendish of Hardwicke (and in 1618 Earl of Devonshire).

<sup>4</sup> Mary, 3rd daughter of James I., born 5 April, 1605, died 16 September, 1607.

<sup>5</sup> The Queen's brother. *Vide supra*, pp. 149, 153.

was apoynted not to be altered, ther be some can testyfy my sorrowe was not inferiour to anger. I did pray for you, and trusted in god, that yow sholde do well and recouer and I am most hartely glad you did so. A number of your frendes did aske for yow, and wer very sorry, that you wer so dangerously sicke, wherby I perceyued there loue, and goodwill towards you, Amongst the rest none more sorrowfull then my oncle, and wished yo<sup>r</sup> recouery with as muche, and earnest goodwill, as any whosoeuer. I never camme to him, but he was so carefull, and inquysytiue about you, as might be, and beleieue it I did obserue that he dothe loue you, and make good reckoning of you, wheruppon I tooke occasion to do you that good, that you colde not haue wished to have me dore more, whiche you shall understande at our next meeting, in the meane tyme I pray keepe it to yo<sup>re</sup> selfe, for I haue made a good way in yo<sup>r</sup> behalfe, and will so continue for yo<sup>r</sup> good. I am bounde the rather to do it in regarde of the great kyndnes my wyfe receyueth at y<sup>or</sup> handes, for whiche I am Very thankfull, and you shall fynde that by somme meanes or other I will make you a full amendes. I was dysapoynted muche in regarde I spake not withe you at my going, for I wolde haue entreated yo<sup>re</sup> fauor about my Cosin Colby about his being put into commission. Neuertheless I presumed thus far uppon y<sup>or</sup> kyndnes as to use y<sup>or</sup> name ioyned withe S<sup>r</sup> Henry Gavdy on his behalfe in his commendacion, besydes S<sup>r</sup> William Waldegraue hathe commended him to my Lo. Cheife Justyce. I pray let me entreate you, that if you meete with my lo. Cheif Justyce at the assyses, yf he dothe chaunce to speake of him, that you will allowe him yo<sup>r</sup> good commendacion and assure your selte I will do you a far greater kyndnes with my oncle, whiche I will forbear to speake of, till my comming into the country. It is lyke enoughe I shall be payde for my paynes at my cosin Colbys hande, and I hope you will not be agaynst my preferment. ther was a specyall restraynt that afore this assyses ther sholde be no more put in all ouer England, for otherwyse my Lo. most willingly wolde haue put him in, but he hathe promysed me after the assyses he shall be put in the commis-



sion. You know I was willing to get you into the commission, and did performe it without commendacions of any, or any other troble, but now my Lo. Chancelor hathe taken order, that none shall comme in but by meanes of the Justice of assyses, and they to receyue commendacion from two Justices of peace out of the country. This is all the suite I have to you, whiche yf you will performe I will not forgett to do you a hundred tymes a greater pleasure withe my oncle. And I knowe he repentes him much he did not make a matche with y<sup>or</sup> house, he is further of withe her then euer, he is in a great rage, that M<sup>r</sup> Worliche is comme into commission, an arranter knaue he sayes neuer was, but he will worke a meanes shortly to haue him out to his greater dysgrace. My cosin Butler is euen now hanging on about my oncle, but he can not abyde him nor will not yet receyue him by no meanes, he is most wonderfully hardly conceyted of him. M<sup>r</sup> Douglas<sup>1</sup> a schotheman was hanged drawen and quartard by reason he hathe abused his maiesty withe the Emperour, and diuers other German states, he dyde a papiste. My Lo. Admyrall<sup>2</sup> is comme home, and to morrowe dothe meete the King at Otelandes. He was feasted all the whyle at the king of Spaynes charge, but he neuer dyned or supped in his presence, whiche is somewhat ill taken. The king is now at Richmonde, the Quene at Whitehall. Within this tenn dayes the progresse dothe begin. I will shortly se yow and certefy yow all other neues. In the meane tyme I pray let me be remembred, etc. London this xxix<sup>th</sup> of June [1605].

Sir Robert Townshend did especyally desyre to be commended to yow, and is most ioyfull for the good recovery of your healthe which I pray God long to continue it.

---

<sup>1</sup> Thomas Douglas forged letters patent from James I., signed and sealed in behalf of Robert Gray (the pseudonym used by Douglas). He was detected by the Elector Palatine, sent back to England, and was hanged for treason.

<sup>2</sup> Charles, Lord Howard of Effingham, who was sent Ambassador-Extraordinary to Spain to ratify the peace with Spain in the previous March.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 201.)

SIR,

Synce our comming to London I colde not meete withe one conveyent messynger, that went into Norfolke. Your man Harry Kendall knewe wher we lay, and promysed to comme to vs, and we colde never so muche as once heare of him afterwardes. And so I was dryven of force to take the ordinary corse to sende downe by the carryar. I will beginn with my fyrst procedinges in my iorneye, and then acquaynt yow with the rest of the newes. I came by my Lady Kytsonne w<sup>th</sup> whom I had great conference. She tolde me what she had hearde about yo<sup>r</sup> sonne, and M<sup>rs</sup> Hauers, she was very sorry in your behalfe, and yo<sup>r</sup> sonnes bothe, yet she was reasonably well persuaded of the matter before I came, but vppon my speache withe her she is fully resolved that all is well, and she is, as she was in the beginning well lyking of the matche and wished that I sholde go forwarde as we had fyrst taken order, only this she requested that by no meanes she wolde haue yow keepe her in yo<sup>r</sup> house still, as she heard yow did, for it was not fytting she sholde be in the house with yo<sup>r</sup> sonne and yo<sup>r</sup> selfe, consydering how muche she went about to abuse you bothe. M<sup>rs</sup> Penelope her selfe afterwarde talked muche withe me about the matter. S<sup>r</sup> fyrst I will tell yow (yf I haue any Judgement) she is bothe a worthy, and a fyne gentlewoman, as any I knowe, both vertuous and very modest. I satysfied her so sufficyently in the matter, as she rested very well contented, and resolved y<sup>t</sup> all was well, conceyuing very well bothe of yow, and yo<sup>r</sup> sonne for so muche as she knoweth yet, only this she wondred muche why the woman stayed ther still. I tolde her in respecte that her turning awaye might haue brought the more dyscredite vppon my kynsman, and so haue bene further spoken of then needed. For y<sup>t</sup> she answerd me, she can do him more hurte whensoever she is turned awaye then she hathe done allready. M<sup>rs</sup> Penelope tolde me that she knewe how that M<sup>rs</sup> Hauers had enquired what manner of woman she was, what yeares she was,

and what qualytyes she had, which she takes in great skorne that so meane, and so base a borne thing sholde enquire after her, and this morouer M<sup>rs</sup> Hauers sholde say, that yf euer M<sup>rs</sup> Penelope sholde marry yo<sup>r</sup> sonne, she sholde but haue her beleeuinges. And M<sup>rs</sup> Penelope said moreouer, that she that allready had done you so muche wronge she wondered how you could endeuer the sight of her, or that euer yo<sup>r</sup> sonne sholde comme in her company. And this I did heare ther more, that what she and her mother (an olde woman of a very bad reporte and name) had begunn in this matter, they wolde neuer leaue to followe and make an ende, and that they wer neerest to them selves and that they neyther respected your good will, or any bodyes els so ther turnes might be served, and assuer your selfe, they having taken the foyle of ther enterpryse will never leave to revyve it, what they can by all meanes possyble. Therefore yow shall do very well to remove the cause, and then yow shall be the surer of a good effecte. M<sup>rs</sup> Penelope I do assuer yow standes well affected to yow, and yo<sup>r</sup> house, and sayde by theise woordes, she did not know how yo<sup>r</sup> sonne wolde lyke her, or how she sholde take lyking of him, but yf it pleased god to bring any suche matter to passe she wolde neuer comme w<sup>th</sup> in the house to be nosed by such a brasen face, as she and all her kyndred hathe, neyther wolde she wishe that euer she sholde comme in her company agayne. My Lady Kytsons syster had one of her systers wayted on her when she hathe turned away for a very bolde thing. And, S<sup>r</sup>, I pray gyve me leave to speake to yow lyke a true and faythefull brother that all the worlde that ever I hearde speake of the matter, and that love yow dearly, and we are sorry in your behalfe, do all wishe and desyer that the woman might be turned awaye, and now in his absence it will be the better done (and as I shall answer vppon my faythe vnto God) I never hearde any one of the contrary opinion. In whiche doing yow shall do your selfe muche good and more credit, but most of all to your sonne, and all the worlde will rest well satysfied. I do assuer yow I do make no doubte but that your sonne will do very well, therefore let no suche blemishe remayne in his eye or your presence. I

know not howe it commes about, but besydes she hathe brought my Lady your wyfe in question, as thoughe she sholde be a party, and an ayder of her in her busines, and thus for ought that I perceyve her staye ther is a dyscredit to all the house. Therefore I must needes tell yow truly and playnely that yf yow hearde but the tenthe parte that I haue hearde of her stay withe yow in yo<sup>r</sup> house, yow wold not keepe her one hower ther. Besydes it is heilde the greater matter, bycause of the basenes of her parentage, byrthe, and frendes, whiche I thinke but for this matter had not bene brought so farr in question. I speake it in no ill will to her, for yf it had bene els wher I wolde have helped her, or at least winked at it. Yow ar wyse enoughe of your selfe, consyder well of the matter. Remoue her presently or els yow will hynder yo<sup>r</sup> sonnes marriage whersoever he shall matche in Englande. If your sonne and I had not prouyded our selues of newe bootes at Bury I thinke we had got bothe our deathes before we had comme at London. We came by M<sup>r</sup> Smythes, and by S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Harris, and no wher els till we camm at London. We haue gott a very good lodging in Fullwood Lane by Grayes Inn, and the clearest place for the infection. The fyrst thing I did I bought him his clothes, hatt, sworde, and other suche necessaryes as he wanted. I haue bene carefull to saue him somewhat, not to spend one penny extraordinary. I neuer brought him into ill company neyther was he euer from me. In all truthe I do not doubt but that he will do very well, and make an honest man, yf he may meete withe a worthy wyfe, as I hoope in god he shall. He hathe seene the lyons, and the tombes at Westmynster. Playes he was neuer at any for they ar all put downe. He hathe bene at the Courte. And whensoever it will please yow to sende, he shall come downe. My Lord Darcy was gone out of towne before we camme to London, and returns not yet this sennight, so that I have done nothing in that busines, and my Lady Kytson will be heare to this weeke. He hathe bene with my Lo. Gawdy.<sup>1</sup> Serieant

<sup>1</sup> Sir Francis Gawdy, now Lord Chief Justice of Common Pleas.

Hubbarde<sup>1</sup> shall this weeke be attorney of the wardes. Serieant Halton<sup>2</sup> and Serieant Coventree<sup>3</sup> sholde be the newe Judges, yet it is thought the King will hau but fower in eche place. My Lo. Gavdy did aske very kyndly for yow. So did my Lo. Popham, and how you had recouered your health. The losse that was in flanders was not so great as was fyrst spoken of, being now better knowen vppon this last relation, but it was most shamefull, for ther wer twelve hundred Hollanders and Englishe menne rann from fower hundred Italions, and only fower did charge those fower hundred, whiche wer S<sup>r</sup> Henry Carie,<sup>4</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Ratcliffe<sup>5</sup> and Captayne Pigott, whiche three wer taken prysoners, the forthe whiche was S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Roo being taken as they three wer, two fell out whiche of ther prysoner he shold be, and they two went together by the eares, and in the meane tyme he ranne his way and escaped; dyuers gentlemen slayne as M<sup>r</sup> Eppes, Joyles Whydden, one of Pinchbackes brothers, Captayne Manners, Captayne Morgan and a frenche colonell.<sup>6</sup> Ther be two great marriages shall very shortly be celebrated at Courte. My Lo. of Suffolkes Daughters withe my Lorde of Essex,<sup>7</sup> and Vicont Cranborne.<sup>8</sup> Ther is a speache that all tables in the courte shall be put downe, and all the attendantes shall be turned to grasse. The king commethe not to London till

<sup>1</sup> Henry Hobart, Serjeant-at-Law, became Attorney of the Court of Wards in 1605.

<sup>2</sup> Though there was a Robert Halton, Serjeant-at-Law in 1580, who was never advanced, the present Serjeant Halton is probably Robert Houghton who became Serjeant-at-Law in 1603, and Judge of King's Bench and knighted in 1613.

<sup>3</sup> Thomas Coventry, Justice of the Common Pleas January, 1606.

<sup>4</sup> Sir H. Carey, K.B., created Viscount Falkland in 1620. He was son of Sir Edward Carey, Master of the Jewel House (*cf.* letter of Ralph Winwood in Stowe MS. 148, f. 158, dated 6 October, 1605 where he speaks of this "Sir Henry Cary, sonne to him of the Jewel House."

<sup>5</sup> Referred to in Winwood's *Memorials*, ii. 145, as "Mr. Radcliffe, brother to Sir John Radcliffe."

<sup>6</sup> Winwood gives his name as Monsieur de Bethune.

<sup>7</sup> Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, married Lady Frances Howard, 2nd daughter of Thomas, Earl of Suffolk, 5 January, 1606.

<sup>8</sup> William Cecil, Viscount Cranborne, 2nd Earl of Salisbury (1612), married Lady Catherine Howard, 3rd daughter of Thomas, Earl of Suffolk, 1 December, 1608.

Wedensday. The quenes pryuy chamber is so straytly kept shutt all day, no body may comme there but Lordes. S<sup>r</sup> lastly to conclude I haue prouyded yow excellent wyne, olyfes, a tamariske cupp (thoughe I colde not heare of fower in London) and a cheese, which yow shall all receyve very shortly. I had but little mony at my comming vp and in good faythe I shall want mony to pay for them, therfore without all fayle send me vp by this carryar that next commes V<sup>n</sup>. I had but twelue ponde of yow in all. I lefte twenty<sup>li</sup> for my wyfe, so ther remaynes xxxiiij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>. tenn shillinges for spurres of my annuitye. I pray fayle not of that and yow shall have all sent downe, And so with my best remembraunces, etc.

This xxviiij of October 1605.

I wolde willingly haue had my cosin have written to yow, but I colde not persuade him; y<sup>t</sup> is not my faulte, he is very well (thankes be to God) and remembers his duty to yow in the best manner. We are now ready to go into Cheapsyde wher he shall dyne with me, wher I am bidden to dynner, and he shall see all my Lo. Mayers shews and pageantes.

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 203.)

SIR,

I have had somme extraordinary busines to followe, whiche is the cause that I had not leysure to sende downe suche thinges as I was purposed to have sent this weeke, but myne and they shall comme alltogether the next weeke and my selfe following. In the meane tyme I will acquaynte yow withe the present neues and begin wher I lefte last, not making an Idle repetition (as some preachers use) and spend more tyme in revttering of the olde then they do in the reporting of the neue. Synce my last lettres vppon fryday last my Lo. Sturton<sup>1</sup> and my cosin Hurlston<sup>1</sup> were

<sup>1</sup> Edward, Lord Stourton, and Henry Hurlston, *al.* Huddleston, of Pattiswick, co. Essex, for complicity in the Gunpowder Plot.

commytted to the tower (two seilly men god knowes). Vppon thursday last ther was a commyssion grauted from the king to bothe the Lo: Chamberlins and Lo: Vicechamberlins to sweare all the Kinges and Quenes seruauntes to the supremacy, whosoeuer, which was that day performed, and none to serue in courte which shall refuse, besydes they ar all to receyue the communion or els to loose their places, whiche order the King will haue obserued in all noblemen, knightes, and gentlemens howses in Englande. Moreouer their is order taken that whosoeuer shall hereafter travell beyonde the seas, he shall before his going be sworne to the supremacy, and to receyue the communion, or els to be stayed and imprysoned, and the lyke to be vsed to all suche as shall heareafter comme from beyonde the seaes, of what degree soener. The King remoued yesterday to Nonesuche. S<sup>r</sup> Fraunces Ver is going to his charge in Hollonde, and wher he shall be employed in greater credit then euer he was. The Hollanders haue taken a Spanishe Carricke valued to be worthe fyue hundred thousande pounde. There was a late peece of seruyce betwixte the Archeduke, and the Hollanders when the Englishe wer put to seruyce on bothe sydes; the Hollanders parte had muche the better, wher as the Hollande Englishe hauing a great aduantage of the other Englishe did forbear, and tolde the cheife governor that they colde not fynde in their hartes to massacre their countrymen and frendes in that dystress, wherevppon the cheife commaunder swore and sent them awaye, and sent certayne Wallons and Ducthe (? for Dutch) whiche cutt all their throotes, when captayne Aderton, and some two or three captaynes, and lyftenantes more wer slayne. S<sup>r</sup> Edward Michilborne,<sup>1</sup> had barded a Caricke in the Indyas, and whilst he was a rifling of her, other shippes cam in, and tooke him and his shipp, hanged all his men, and sawed him in peeces with a wodden sawe. Southwarke sholde haue bene sett on fyre by dyuers lewde persons whiche ar in pryson to the number of seuen or eyghte. Ther ar yet no Shreifes prickt nor (as it is thought) shall not be till next terme.

<sup>1</sup> Sir Edward Michelborne, adventurer, who, however, lived to return home, and died *circa* 1611. (*Nat. Biog.*)

S<sup>r</sup> Henry Gavdy is thought shall be Shreife and is one of the Leiftenantes, (whiche I thinke is not unknowen to yow). My Lo: Riche and my lady wer dyuorsed vppon fryday was sennight before the hye commysioners, when my L. Archbishop chydd my Lo. Riche very mucche and gaue my lady great commendacion, telling what an honourable house she was of, and how hardly my Lo: had vsed her, and in the ende very honorably (or rather gratusly) bad my Lorde Riche go amongst his puritans; thankes be to God, his grace colde not touche my Ladye withe that heresy, for hers is *error venialis*. This matter hathe done her somme little good any way, and thers an ende of that matter. S<sup>r</sup>, what I have this present forgott, I will recorde my selfe at our meeting. In the meane tyme I pray let me be remembered to my most sweete Bidd, whom I more longe to see and to be withe then euer I did in my lyfe. I neuer yet receyued one lyne from her. I praye God blesse my Doll whom I mucche desyer to see. My lord of Northumberland<sup>1</sup> hath bene examyned this three dayes together, and is in great daunger in the opinion of the world, not yet committed to the tower.

*Inserted*  
This xxvjth of Nouember [1605].

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 205.)

SIR,

I must confesse I haue stayed my hande very long not hauing any thinge worthe the writing concerning my cosins businesse, concerning whom I will fyrst saye thus mucche of him, that he is of very good nature, and toward condition, and I doubt not of his very excellent well doing. We haue had very straunge fortune concerning my Lady Kytson and my Lo. Darcy, for fyrst the lady neuer camme, nor comes not yet this fortnight. My lo. was out of towne at owr fyrst comming, and camme to towne but one night, the next

<sup>1</sup> Henry Percy, 9th Earl, for suspected complicity in the Gunpowder Plot.



day, when my cosin and I went to him, he was gone that morning to Nonesuche and so dyrectly home into the country agayne, wher he lyethe all this wynter. So that I do assure you of my faythe there is no fault in us concerning these matters, but yf you will haue me comme downe by my lorde I will most willingly ryde out of my way to do you any servyce, or els, whensoever you will after my comming into country I will take my iorney presently thether and make a fynall ende, his house is not past twenty myle from Crowes Hall. Concerning my Cosins charges I knowe not of any but that wer necessary, and this place can not be lyued in without expence. For myne owne parte I haue not bene chargeable to him at any tyme, but I haue helped him in many charges, as him selfe, and his man can best tell. I brought him neyther into ill place, or ill company, and most of our tyme we spent at courte. I haue bene offered dyuers good matches for him, but I entertayned none till this matter be ended. He is mended in his carriage and behaiour wonderfull muche, and was very well lyked and beloued of many worthy gentlemen. I was willing enough to have had him downe before, but I fownde him more willing to staye, but beleiue it of my faythe he is bettered in his behaiour tenn tymes the valewe of the expence. Yow shall receyve by this carryar two vesselles of wyne, the bigger, canary, the lesser muskeden. I dare assuer you they ar good, yow must lett them stande at least two or three dayes before they be broched that the lees may settle. I haue sent yow downe the Tamariske cupp, whiche I tooke great paynes to gett, and it was the best I colde fynde any wher. It is in my cosins truncke, the dearest wood that euer I bought in my lyfe. It must be vsed thus as I sett downe and not otherwyse. It must stande full of colde water an hower, and euer after yow may drinke wyne, or beere in it, and allwayes it must be washed withe colde water, and no whott liquor at any tyme. I had bought olyfes, and a cheese ready to be sente withe the wyne, and my man Coxcombe forgott to carry them to the carryar, but they shall come very shortly withe some oringes and lemmans, and I haue prouyded to gett yow a barrell of Caperonns, the most fynest for sallettes that euer yow eate in y<sup>or</sup> lyfe. I have under-

taken a little businesse whiche will helpe me heare yet this sen-  
 night, but by Gods grace I will see yow shortly in the countrye.  
 My cosin Fram[lingham] I thinke will proue a courtier, for he is  
 very muche in loue withe the place. I have written a letter to my  
 oncle Anthony, wherin I have written all the newes that I know  
 or can heare of, whiche letter I have written to him presently to  
 shewe you, and after that yow have seene it that S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Bacon  
 may have a sight of it, for I colde have writt but the selfe same to  
 yow bothe, and that wolde have done yow but small pleasure. If  
 I may do yow any servyce while I am heare I am ready to do it,  
 etc. this xx<sup>th</sup> of Nouember [1605].

It is directly thought that S<sup>r</sup> Henry Gavdy shall be Shreife of  
 Norfolke, and S<sup>r</sup> Robert Jermyn in Suffolke, and yet it is spoken  
 generally that ther shall be no alteration of Shreifes till next terme.  
 My cosin Fram. hathe all the proc[l]amacions and one that camm  
 new out this morning.

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 221.)

SIR,

I receyved a letter from you by Graye, but I had sent my man  
 Manning before according to the tyme I apoynted to go my  
 selfe. The myshapp of my fall hathe bred me great crosses and  
 muche payne (I thanke God for it) and am glad to be acquaynted  
 withe patience. My arme grewe so ill after my comming from  
 Redgraue as I was faynte to vse the aduyse of a surgion of Burye,  
 and afterwardes of M<sup>r</sup> Stutfeild of bothe whom I was aduysed that  
 yf I sholde presently trauell I wolde repent it all dayes of my lyfe,  
 and that nothing wolde do me good but only rest, wherevppon I  
 bethought me better to loose farr greater business then I had, then  
 that I sholde vtterly haue spoyled myself. Yet neuerthesse thus  
 farr I haue delte carefully and honestly in y<sup>or</sup> busines that I sent vp  
 my man of purpose hauing no busines of myne owne, but only to  
 buye my Lyueries, I haue written an especyall letter to M<sup>r</sup> Pouell

to knowe whether he hath yet any commission newly graunted out, or no, yf not that he sholde with all hast procure out one to be made, and this weeke I shall haue ansuer from him by my man howe all thinges stande. Then I writt very effectually to M<sup>r</sup> Dewe, and sent him a token, from whom I shall lykwyse haue answere, and besydes I writt a letter to M<sup>r</sup> Mawe to put him in mynde. I will be at London by Gods grace nexte weeke my selfe, when vppon my creditt yf all thinges be not perfited as they sholde be to yo<sup>r</sup> best contentment, neuer holde me for yo<sup>r</sup> brother, and my credit rest vppon it, though no creature els deale in the matter. So that you shall not neade to take any further care in thes matters, I haue written a large epistle to Isacke withe the best directions I colde gyue him and I told my man besydes of the best fashions for lyueries, that I doub not butt that Isacke and he together will deuise and fynishe them as well as yf I had bene there, I gaue him directions besydes for the Jerkin, for your ij suites he needes not anye instructions. I dare warrant you that Manning will stande yo<sup>r</sup> men in good steade in all their busines. for the other matter you wrote of, I will talke withe you therof at our nexte meeting to be done to your best lyking. My arme I thanke god is muche amended withe this rest, I wore no dublett neuer synce my coming home, for that spoyled me, and besydes I haue had a rouser vnder myne arme. I hope by the nexte weeke by gods grace to be prettyly well, and yf I may knowe iustly of the daye of the marriage either to come to go withe you, or else to meete you there, and so from thence to go to London directly, and sende vp my thinges by the carryars aforehande. So that I will be ther som ix, or x dayes in the terme, I wolde gladly speake withe you before my going vp, bycause we might priuatly deuise the better of all matters and I hope in god I shall be able then to ryde, and dyspache my busines. I doubt not but to tell you some good neues I shall heare from London before my going, and what is not done, shall be perfited by me, I wolde gladly heare from you to knowe how you and my good Lady dothe, and when you take yo<sup>r</sup> iorney desyring to be recommended to you bothe in the best and kyndest manner, and to my oncle Anthony, and to the good Lady of

Redgraue withe S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas: She is worthy to be remembred, for she is a frende of all dystressed and maymed persons.

Chilton this xv<sup>th</sup> of June, *s.a.*

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 223.)

SIR,

I did not forgett you about the comyssion and bycause you shall knowe it to be true, I was withe M<sup>r</sup> Powell, and S<sup>r</sup> Clement Higham<sup>1</sup> was placed in the last commission went downe betwixt you and Lovell<sup>2</sup> but nowe he is placed in his booke according to his place by his owne meanes agaynst the next to be made. I can assure you of my faythe that M<sup>r</sup> Lovell<sup>2</sup> made sute not only to be aboue you in comyssion, but above iii more in the countrey as I will shortly tell you more at large. I sawe M Yelverton newe come in and M<sup>r</sup> Louell and his sonne have left behynde them the most notable notes of ther folly at the courte, that this age will not blott them out. S<sup>r</sup>, my wyfe and my selfe have great occasion to use fyfty poundes agaynst Michilmas, we bothe entreat you we may have it agaynst that tyme. This letter enclosed I pray let it be sent to S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Bacon, wher you shall vnderstande all the newes I knowe, I haue so little tyme to write as I can not runn them ouer agayne, I will vysyte you shortly at Harling, when I will bring you the redd inke. Thus withe my best commendacions to yo<sup>r</sup> good selfe, and my Lady I commytt you to god.

31 July, *s.a.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Bassingbourne Gawdy's first wife, Anne, was daughter of Sir C. Framlingham, and his wife, Dorothy, daughter of Sir Clement Heigham, Knt.

<sup>2</sup> The Lovells were neighbours of the Gawdys, and lived at East Harling.

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 231.)

SIR,

I mistrusted my earely rising to come sone enoughe to Culforde, and I knowe S<sup>r</sup> William Spring<sup>1</sup> will be ther betymes withe his companye. And because your selfe dothe playe I am the lesse willing to be one. I praye S<sup>r</sup> do me the fauor that I maye be your halfe as fur as fyue pounce goethe. Manning shall delyuer yow fyfty shillinges for my parte. S<sup>r</sup> I will take it very kyndely at your handes, let fortune runn whiche waye she will, and yf you do but saye a worde to Manning it is enoughe, And yet you neede not be acknowen therof to any of the gamesters. I will be ther in the morning as sone as I convenientlye maye. And so I committ you to god wishing yow, and y<sup>or</sup> sweetest Lady bothe yo<sup>r</sup> hartes contente.

Undated.

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Eg. 2804, f. 229.)

SIR,

I receyued a letter from yow this Laste nighte by yowr Skolemaster, wherin I vnderstande the remembrance of such matters, as passed betwixte you and me at our Last communication, you neede not make any doubte that I w[ill] forgett yow in a farr Lesse matter, then any of thos you imparted to me. And I thinke yow will not denye but that I haue bene very carefull of suche busines as you haue committed to my charge. I haue now immediatly taken vp my horses, and within some fyue or six dayes they will be ensaymed ready by gods grace for me to take my iorneye, when immediatly after yow shall heare from me. I have heare sent yow more artichoke slippes of the best kynde. I will remember y<sup>r</sup> wyne, and yowr other busines. And if yow did but

<sup>1</sup> Sir William Springe, knighted in February, 1611, was Sheriff of Suffolk in 1620.

knowe what I losse I had at Cambridge of my cloke, and did but thinke but what a great charge it wolde be to me to buye a newe one, consyderinge that I haue ij children at nurs. S<sup>r</sup> yf yow will do me the fauor to sende me one of your riding clokes by this bearer I will take it moste kyndly and it will bynde me to remember your busines withe great care and dylygence. And it may be I shall well desarue it, And, thus with myne, and my Biddes best commendacions, my cosin Foskeues and my mothers bothe to youre selfe and my good Lady I committ yow to god.

Chilton this xxiiij<sup>the</sup> of October, *s.a.*

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Add. 27395, f. 25.)

SIR,

I haue had as greate care about getting of a schoolemaster, as I colde be of anything for my Lyfe. The party that I determynd to haue is gone from Sudberry is gone from thence, and placed in a gentlemans house, to that ende to teache chyl dren. His father was exceeding sorry he was gone, by cause he muc he desyred to haue him in so good a place, and at my apoyntment I will laye for a specyall one at London, I do not dyrectly know, how yow shall be prouyded, but yf yow be not very well to yo<sup>r</sup> Lyking, Write but three Lynes vppon Mondaye nexte in a letter, that I shall certeynly prouyde you one, I will in the meane vse all the meanes I can to seeke out a very fitt man for you, and yf yow be content therewith, I will take some order to sende him downe vppon Lyking and as yow agree. The letter may be with me vppon Thursdaye nexte, for my man shall carry it to Thetforde. I wente vp withe no great store of mony. I pray S<sup>r</sup> If yowr plenty be theareafter and that yow can spare so muc he I praye delyuer my man forty shillings, for I sholde buy some necessaryes for Bidd whiche I wolde not willingly fayle to do. Thus withe my best becomming commendacions, etc.

Chylton this Saterdag morning.

---

## TO HIS BROTHER.

(Add. 27395, f. 34.)

SIR,

I haue heare sent yow by this bearer my man twenty slippes of artichockes of the very best kynde, and they be all well rooted, for barbarye, I can yet gett none to send to yowr Lady, assone as I can yow shall receyue some. I am enforced of greate necessitye to send to yow for all my rente before T[hursday?] whiche commethe in all as we agreed at o<sup>r</sup> last meeting at Redgrave to thyrtye poundes eleuen shillinges and ij<sup>d</sup>. Yf yow can conueniently send me all the monye yow shall do me a great pleasure but in any wyse yow muste needes sende me tenn poundes, for I protest of my faythe I was excedingly deceyued, thinking it was the sixtene daye, and it is the sixte daye whiche is frydaye nexte that I must pay for the corne I boughte, which (I thanke God) is worthe doble the monye but I haue yet solde none, nor will not a while, till I se Christmas past, but I haue no reason to breake withe him that I had so good a pennyworth of, therfore I praye S<sup>r</sup> fayle me not of so muche for it must needes be payde on Fridaye, and dyspache my man awaye withe all speede, yf you do delyuer all the mony to this bearer it shal be yo<sup>r</sup> dyscharge. And I haue sent an acquittance for the whole. Yf you can not conueniently, I praye S<sup>r</sup> sende me worde, when I shall sende for the rest but I looke for this tenn poundes without all fayle. I can say nothing for the hundred pounce till nexte weeke. I hope to sende you newes shall content you. And so withe my best and kyndest commendacions to yo<sup>r</sup> good selfe, my good Lady yo<sup>r</sup> wyfe and my oncle Anthony I comitt you to God.

This iiij<sup>th</sup> of September, *s.a.*

---

TO HIS BROTHER.

(Add. 27395, f. 41.)

SIR,

I haue heare sent yow the hundred poundes according to my promyse without any bande as yet at all, but only relying vppon yo<sup>r</sup> honorable worde vntill my comming ouer to Harling, whiche shall be by gods grace about our Lady daye when I will take the bande in bothe yowr names. If yow had had occasion of vse of more mony yow sholde haue had it. I can say no more but that I remayne yowr poore yonger brother to be allwayes commaunded in all true kyndnes. Desyring that my selfe my Bydd, my Cosin Foskeue, and my mother may reture our best and kyndest commendacions to yo<sup>r</sup> selfe my Ladye, and my oncle Anthonye, hoping er it be long that we shall haue a merry meeting at Harling.

Chilton this xij<sup>th</sup> of Marche, *s.a.*

---

(Add. 27395, f. 65.)

Bond whereby Framlingham Gavdy of West Harling, co. Norfolk, Esquire, and Charles Gavdy of the same esquire [sons of Sir Bassingborne Gawdy] acknowledge themselves to owe John Nvnne of Burye S<sup>t</sup> Edmvsds, Esq. the sum of sixty pounds to be paid to the said John Nvnne within twenty days after the return of Phillip Gavdye [their uncle] "from Jerusalem in Pallestyne within the Countrie of Judea into the realme of England and hath lawfully proved, shewed and declared vnto the said Framlingham and Charles by certificate or testimoniall under the seal of the said City of Jerusalem or by other sufficient or true processes that the said Phillipp Gavdy hath bene personally at the said city." Dated 21 Oct. 1611.

---



## TO HIS NEPHEW [Framlingham Gawdy].

(Eg. 2804, f. 207.)

GOOD COSIN,

It is not want of good will or well wishing to you hathe heilde me all this whyle from writing, but in truthe I haue bene out of towne two seuerall tymes and cam somme ij or iij dayes before the tylting whiche I sawe, and it was as poorely worthe the seing as any that euer I sawe in my lyfe, and very fewe runners w<sup>th</sup> namely wer theise. The Duke of Lynneux [Lennox], my L. of Arundell, my L. of Penbrooke, my Lo. of Mongommery,<sup>1</sup> my Lo. Hayes,<sup>2</sup> my Lo. Dingwell,<sup>3</sup> my Lo. North,<sup>4</sup> my Lo. of Walden,<sup>5</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Tho. Howarde,<sup>6</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Robert Dowglas,<sup>7</sup> bothe the Alexanders.<sup>8</sup> None made any shew at all, my Lo. Dingwell was worthe all the rest. Ther hathe bene much speache abowt the abuse was offered to my Lo. of Mongommery and many ar much greeued about it and gyue seuerall censures. His name was Patrick<sup>9</sup> . . . the yongest brother Master of the Duke of York.<sup>10</sup> He is commytted to the tower w<sup>th</sup> some holde for honour rather then for dysgrace. My Lo. Willoughby is going very shortly. S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Poley w<sup>th</sup> the long nose is his Lifenant Generall. S<sup>r</sup> Henry Payton, Serient Maior. S<sup>r</sup> Thomas [Meautis?], S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Selby and dyuers other Captaynes go w<sup>th</sup> great commande. Amongst the rest knightly my Lo. Treasurers man is a pryuatt captayne and yet neuer saw the warres. Ther ar ij thousand men going for Virginia and some

<sup>1</sup> Philip Herbert, Earl of Montgomery (1607) succeeded his brother as Earl of Pembroke in 1630.

<sup>2</sup> James Hay, Lord Hay, Baron Hay of Sawley (1615), Viscount Doncaster (1618), Earl of Carlisle (1622).

<sup>3</sup> Sir Richard Preston of Halltree, created Lord Dingwall in 1607 (died 1628).

<sup>4</sup> Dudley North, 3rd Baron North.

<sup>5</sup> Theophilus, eldest son of the Earl of Suffolk, Baron Howard of Walden, succeeded his father 1626.

<sup>6</sup> Created in 1612 Viscount Andover and in 1626 Earl of Berkshire.

<sup>7</sup> Master of the Horse to Prince Henry.

<sup>8</sup> Sir Sigismond and Mr. Henry Alexander *al. Zinzan*. Their names often occur in the tiltings.

<sup>9</sup> This letter is torn on the right hand margin.

<sup>10</sup> Prince Charles.

others ar going for the new-fownde lande. Captayne S<sup>r</sup> Henry J . . . go for Persia, and many gentlemen go w<sup>th</sup> him and aduenture greatly with him. The hereticque was burned lately in Smythefilde. My Lo. Treasurer some say is ill, some say amanded, but I do veryly thinke he is weake, but by Gods grace may recouer. S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Sommerset was hurte with a fall, and so rann not at tylt. Little other newes worthe the writing. I will by gods grace [be at] Harling before Easter. Good Fram. you [knowe] I did euer loue you, and so I will contyne[we] while I lyue. I pray let me entreate yo[u not] to fayle to keepe my rente for me and t[ake?] small rekoning, and that now according [to your] promyse I be payde for the saddle clo[th.] I will not vse yow vnreasonably in the [matter] besydes. Yf yow can yow must needes . . . me withe fyfty ponde, and then we will make vp the rekoning fore all the rest I haue euer trusted yow and done yow all right. Good Fram`forgett me not in this matter, for it concernethe me very nearly bothe in my creditt, and in the way of my preferment of marriage w<sup>ch</sup> I am now somewhat earnestly about. I was withe one wydowe, and she was somewhat to lyghte, and an other and she was cracket, but I thynke I haue synce mett with a better. I pray, cosin, forgett me not in this request for it concerneth me very neerly. All other neues you shall heare at my comming till when I pray remember me to yo<sup>r</sup> good wyfe, yo<sup>r</sup> worthy selfe, my noble cosin Charles and his vertuous wyfe, and I pray tell Doll I will pray for her and I will bring downe withe me all suche thinges as I promysed her.

London this xxvj<sup>th</sup> of Marche [1613].

Your ever faythefull

oncle till deathe,

PH. GAVDY.

(Add. 27395, f. 114.)

General release from Philip Gavdy of West Harling, co. Norf. Esq. to Framlingham Gavdy except with regard to "a cer-

teyn annuitye of one hundred markes a yere graunted vnto me the sayd Phillipp by my father and payable out of the lands of the said fframlingham . . . during my life." 28 Nov. 1613.

---

TO [?FRAMLINGHAM GAUDY, HIS NEPHEW].

(Eg. 2804, f. 208.)

SIR,

That I haue bene very sicke, and daungerously synce my last parting from your company is very true, but wheras it was reported that I was deade, I can assuer yow vnder myne owne hande that it is false, I thanke god for it, I knowe besydes by some of my good frendes, that you haue hearde some other false reportes concerning me, w<sup>ch</sup> I wolde entreate yow, and all my worthy frendes neuer to gyue credit to, I gyue god thanks I lyue, and am in good healthe ready to do yow, and all my faythefull frendes the best seruyce I am able, that I haue nott hetherto written, I am to craue pardon, and yet I can frame a reasonable excuse on that behalfe yett at last I did remember the olde prouerbe better late, then neuer, *nunquam sera est ad bonos mores via*. I know yow haue had bothe newes written, and brought downe by worde of mouthe; yet neuerthelesse I will at all aduentures send yow downe some, if it were but for fashion sake. If knowen before, myne can make but the better confirmation therof, yf otherwyse, I knowe it will be the better wellcome, bycause that newes is best in season, when it is newest, whether it be true, or false. The most emynent that now is, is concerning a parlament, whiche dothe begynn the fifte of Aprill being tuesday, haue a care concerning your selfe in that businesse, bycause ther ar many labor for places in the house. We saye heare that directly S<sup>r</sup> Hary Benningfeild shall be knight of the sheire. To tell yow of my Lo. of Sommersettes<sup>1</sup> marriage, the great gyftes of plate, and the great brauery was ther w<sup>th</sup> maskes wer very stale, the lyke was at my Lo. of Roxborne<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Robert Kerr *al.* Carr, Earl of Somerset, married to Frances, the divorced Countess of Essex, 26 December, 1613.

<sup>2</sup> Robert Ker, of Cessford, Earl of Roxburgh, married 3 February, 1614, Jane daughter of Patrick, 3rd Lord Drummond.

marriage, only withe a pastorall.<sup>1</sup> I will not troble yow with any other particulars, only at the last marriage M<sup>r</sup> Haydon<sup>2</sup> did very muche ouershoote himselfe, and as it is thought will neuer recouer his former fauor, he is commytted to the fleete wher he is likely to continewe, for euery man condemnes him, and no man takethe his parte; that very day his father was put out of possession of Bakens-thorpe, so as it is sayde that father and sonne wer vndonne bothe in a daye; the sonne did carry him selfe in this businesse towards my Lo. of Essex so idly and vnaduysedly as his very best frendes do alltogether dyslyke therof. My Lo. of Sussex and S<sup>r</sup> Mihill Stanhop haue agreeede of a marriage to be presently solemnysed.<sup>3</sup> My Lo. assureth all his land but ij<sup>e</sup> a yeare to my Lo. Fitzwalter, and S<sup>r</sup> Mihil Stanhop gyuethe his daughter vij<sup>o</sup> a yeare in present and viij<sup>o</sup> a yeare more in reuersion. Ther is an other marriage agreeede of betwixt M<sup>r</sup> Radney<sup>4</sup> (that went ouer with M<sup>r</sup> Seymor) and Francke Southwell; it sholde haue bene presently performed, but vppon somme occasion it is deferred. The matter for the duelles that was censured in the Starr chamber I imagine yow haue hearde of, only this I obserued that the carryer of the challenge was fyned at fyue hundred pownde, wheras he that sent the challenge was fyned but at two hundred. The order shall be brought downe to the assises, and ther publyshed and the lyke shall be done in all circuites of Englande. S<sup>r</sup> Stephen Procters<sup>5</sup> cause was hearde in the Starrchamber. My Lo. Chaunceler, my Lo. Archbishop my Lo. of London and Sir Julius Ceasar wer of his syde. My Lo. Cheife Justyce, my Lo. Hubbarde, my Lo. Cheife barron, and

<sup>1</sup> A Pastoral by Samuel Daniel, the Poet, entitled "Hymen's Triumph," was performed at Lord Roxburgh's wedding at Somerset House.

<sup>2</sup> A son of Sir Christopher Heydon, of Baconsthorpe, co. Norfolk. He quarrelled with Lord Essex at Lord Roxburgh's wedding, but a duel was stopped by sending Heydon to the Fleet Prison.

<sup>3</sup> Henry Ratcliffe, Viscount Fitzwalter, son of Robert, 5th Earl of Sussex, married in February, 1614, Jane, daughter and co-heir of Sir Michael Stanhope, of Sudbury.

<sup>4</sup> Edward Rodney (knighted in the following May), married Frances, daughter of Sir Robert Southwell, of Woodrising, co. Norfolk.

<sup>5</sup> Accused of trying to involve two Yorkshire knights on suspicion about the Gunpowder Plot and of slandering the Lord Privy Seal (Cal. of State Papers).

Barran Altum<sup>1</sup> wer agaynst him, so as equall voyces kepte him from censuring, and yet the worlde holdes an opinion of him that he is voyde of all honesty. M<sup>r</sup> Talbot<sup>2</sup> a prysoner in the tower was fyned at tenn thowsand pounce, imprisonment during the kynges pleasure, and acknowledgiment of his faulte at the next parliamentes both in England and Irelande. He is an Irishe man worthyly punished for his wylde and erronious speaches in saying that the pope had power to depose kynges. The Prince of Conde and the duke of Guyse ar gone from the courte<sup>3</sup> in dyscontent ; the quene regent hathe made suite to haue the regency of fraunce fyue yeares longer, w<sup>ch</sup> is dyrectly denyde her, the kyng her sonne being now fourteen yeares olde, the age that all the frenche kynges do take vppon them to gouerne ther owne estate<sup>4</sup> . . . The Marquis of Amchora<sup>5</sup> vppon a challendge wente into the feilde withe an other frenche Marquesse wher bothe their secondes wer slayne, and themselves cam of very sore hurte, whervppon ther is a newe edict com forthe very strayte vppon all kynde of challenges that eyther in towne or city whersoever, all people may attache them, and presently to haue marshall lawe, and besydes not to be allowed christian buriall. This sommer the frenche kyng<sup>6</sup> shall receyue his wyfe out of Spayne, and delyuers his owne syster to them, and whylst I write frenche newes I can not forgett the fayre lady Gardiner, who is lately come ouer, the most compleate and accomplished lady that lyues in this lande. My Lo. Mayor hathe vtterly vndone Ro : More, he hathe throwen downe his pale and destroyed his lodge ; and his connyes are runn away, some into Westmyster and other places, wher they be so pestered, as they ar ready to eate one an other ; suche as my Lorde toke for his owne prouision he sent to brydwell, and went to many places

<sup>1</sup> Sir James Altham, Baron of the Exchequer.

<sup>2</sup> An Irish lawyer, fined for malapert speeches to the King on the Oath of Allegiance and the authority of the Pope.

<sup>3</sup> The French Court being dissatisfied with the government of Maria de Medicis, Queen Regent during the minority of Louis XIII.

<sup>4</sup> The letter is torn at this point.

<sup>5</sup> Probably Concino Concini, Marquis d'Ancre, assassinated in 1617.

<sup>6</sup> Louis XIII. married Anne daughter of Philip III. of Spain, and Philip the Infante married Elizabeth, daughter of Henry IV of France.

dysguysed, and sent for their best commodityes, and after he had sene them, then he called his men and his officers about him, and conueyes them safely to brydwell, and so betrayes a poore company of playne dealing creatures. The game will be wonderfully defaced and destroyed, for before my Lo. gothe out of his Mayrolty it will be as it was in Norfolke in the great froste, when all the conyes rann out of the warrens, and so vppon a thowe [thaw] the owners lost great prouysion<sup>1</sup> . . .

[Feb. 1614.]

---

TO HIS NEPHEW FRAMLINGHAM.

(Eg. 2804, f. 210.)

SIR,

Your neighbour Hornewell gave me a good meanes of sending downe this letter so conveniently, neyther will the carryage prove chargeable. I am bownde to wryte newes ex officyo whether it be stale, or newe, and the oldest that can be wrytten of is concerning my Lo. of Somersett,<sup>2</sup> and his lady, that they ar bothe condemned to be hanged all the worlde knowethe and that many dayes it was reported my Lo. sholde haue bene excecuted, but that reporte is well quallyfyed and euery body is of opinion they shall bothe lyue howsoever they wishe in their hartes. My Lo. is kepte closer prisoner then she is, and weareth his George and garter dayly, though he at the day of his arraignment he very idly put it of him selfe. Ther ar but iij causes can make those knightes be dysgraded, the one is flying from the kynge strandard, the other treason, and the last heresye. Yesterday being monday ther wer dyuers released out of pryson concerning that businesse, being all bayled at the Kinges benche barr for their apparaunce

<sup>1</sup> The letter is illegible at this point.

<sup>2</sup> Though found guilty of the murder of Sir Thomas Overbury they both received pardon, the Countess dying in 1632, and the Earl in 1645.

when they shall be called for. Mr. Coppinger<sup>1</sup> and one Andrewe<sup>1</sup> out of the tower, Mr. Whitakers<sup>1</sup> out of the fleete for carrying a letter and mony to M<sup>rs</sup> Turner<sup>2</sup> from my Lady of So[merset], one George<sup>1</sup> and M<sup>rs</sup> Horne<sup>3</sup> out of the Marshal-sea, and Megg M<sup>rs</sup> Turner mayde out of brydwell, who amongst many other good deedes had poysened a catt. Ther is a newe Chaunceler of the Duchy S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Deckam, by the deathe of S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Parry, who hathe lefte my lady all during lyfe, and the reuersion of all to come to younge M<sup>r</sup> Knyuytt that was brought vp at M<sup>r</sup> Raulyns at Attleboroughe. It is sayde he ment to gyve to M<sup>r</sup> Abuell his nephewe some eyght hundred ponnde a yeare, but it fell out otherwyse. Vppon Sondag last he was sworne of the pryuy councell and w<sup>th</sup> him S<sup>r</sup> Fraunces Bacon M<sup>r</sup> Attorney the same day, whose fauor is exceeding great with the King for he is very shortly to be made Lo: Keeper of the great seale.<sup>5</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Henry Yeluerton<sup>6</sup> to succeede him in place, and S<sup>r</sup> Randolphe Crue<sup>7</sup> to comme into his. My Lo: Chaunceler<sup>8</sup> resignethe vp his place, and shall be created Earl of Cambridge, and Lo: Presydente of the Councell, S<sup>r</sup> George Villers<sup>1</sup> shold be made Vicount Beamont, and Earle of Leycester.<sup>9</sup> My Lo: Cooke is in some dysfaueur w<sup>th</sup> his maiesty, and by reason of enuy hathe got many enemyes. I thinke S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Mounson<sup>10</sup> is buried in oblyuion, for ther is not any

<sup>1</sup> Coppinger and Andrewe certainly, and the others mentioned here probably were servants of the Earl of Somerset.

<sup>2</sup> Anne Turner was executed for the murder in 1615.

<sup>3</sup> Mrs. Horne was maid to the Countess.

<sup>4</sup> Sir Thomas Dacombe.

<sup>5</sup> Sir F. Bacon was appointed Lord Keeper 7 March, 1617.

<sup>6</sup> Sir H. Yelverton, Solicitor-General, became Attorney-General 12 March, 1617.

<sup>7</sup> Sir R. Crewe did not become Solicitor-General, though he was made Chief Justice of King's Bench in 1625.

<sup>8</sup> Thomas Egerton, Baron Ellesmere, Viscount Brackley, Lord Chancellor, resigned 3 March, 1617, and died 12 days after. On the day of his death he was designated Earl of Bridgewater.

<sup>9</sup> Sir G. Villiers was created Earl of Buckingham 5 January, 1617, the title of Earl of Leicester being conferred on Robert Sydney 2 August, 1618.

<sup>10</sup> Sir T. Monson, Master of the Armoury at the Tower, accused of complicity in Sir T. Overbury's murder, was after long delay acquitted, 22 February, 1617.

speache now concerning him or his arraignment. It is thought his brother will be very shortly delyuered. M<sup>r</sup> Attorney neuer went to Westmynster Hall this terme, neyther can he pleade any causes any more, synce he had that honor bestowed vppon him. I haue wayted vppon him uery dyligently euer since my being heare, but now in reason I am bounde to wayte vppon him more than euer heartofore, and I hope it may be for my good yf promyses be kepte. Some thinke he shall not be sworne in the place till the nexte terme, but it is most certeyne he shall haue the place. My Lo. Hayes is going very shortly, and that will Sir Thomas Jermyn, and Sir Ralph Shelton fynd to their great cost and chardge. I pray S<sup>r</sup> remember my seruyce to y<sup>or</sup> Brother S<sup>r</sup> Charles,<sup>1</sup> and tell him that in trothe I was very hardly delt w<sup>th</sup> all concerning that mony sholde haue bene payde last terme. I pray let me entreate him that it may be made ready presently, bycause it must presently be vsed. I doubt not, but that he will have true consyderation therof, not to hynder me. I do not thinke it was alltogether his faulte. I heare yow go often to bowles to Bukenam, where I wishe my selfe w<sup>th</sup> yow and the good company. I hope shortly to be ther w<sup>th</sup> yow, and to be partaker of yo<sup>r</sup> sportes. You have often tolde me of my tedious writing. I am lyke to make your wordes good. I knowe lyttle els worthe the writing, but what I have don is to let you know I will not forgett my nearest and best frendes. My lady of Salisbury is brought to bed of a boy, and they say the king will be god-father. S<sup>r</sup> William Herbert sueareth not alltogether so loude for feare my Lady of Montgomery sholde haue a boye who lookes her euery day. Thus with my best and kyndest remembraunces, etc.

xth of June [1616].

---

<sup>1</sup> Charles Gawdy, Framlingham's younger brother, had been knighted 26 November, 1613.



## TO HIS NEPHEW FRAMLINGHAM.

(Eg. 2804, f. 212)

SIR,

I haue sent to yow once agayne from George Gawdyes chamber wher I dynded w<sup>th</sup> him, and fynding an honest messynger, I colde not chose but reuyue my olde Letter that was written some sennight synce, and promysed to be carryed by my deare frende Hornewell, but he forgott to come for the Letter. S<sup>r</sup> In augmentation of the newes yow shall fynde of the newes in the other Letter. Ther ar fower barrons to be newly created, S<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Bacon, S<sup>r</sup> Henry Wallop, S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Thynne, and S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Hollyes<sup>1</sup> who they say sholde be raysted to hyer honor, to be one of his ma<sup>ties</sup> Pryuy Councell. They say his purse is very well lyned, but w<sup>th</sup> wearing it may growe threadbare. It is certeynly lately reported that my Lo. Cooke<sup>2</sup> sholde be of the same kynd created. It is credyibly reported that on thursday next the King in person will sett at the star chamber, and ther is preparation for it, to reconcyle all businesse betwixt great persons. The prynces Inauguration<sup>3</sup> shall be vppon the ninth day of the next monthe. The great cristning was performed on Saterdag last<sup>4</sup> of my Lo. of Salisburys chylde, wher the King, my Lo. Treasurer, and my Lady of Walden wer gossypes. My Lady of Hertforde was loth to comme vp, who sholde haue bene the other gossyp. Thus with my servyce to your selfe, my cosin your wyfe, and Sir Charles I take my leave and my cosin George Gavdy in the lyke manner remembers him selfe to you all.

[17-22 June, 1616].

---

<sup>1</sup> Of these four Sir J. Hollis was the only one created Baron, with the title of Baron Hollis of Haughton, 9 July, 1616, paying £10,000 for his new dignity.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Edward Coke, commonly called Lord Coke or Cooke, was never raised to the Peerage; at this particular moment indeed he was in disgrace, being summoned before the Council on 25 June to answer various charges.

<sup>3</sup> *Sc.* Prince Charles, as Prince of Wales, Prince Henry having died in 1612. The ceremony was postponed till 4 November, 1616.

<sup>4</sup> 15 June, 1616.

TO HIS NEPHEW FRAMLINGHAM.

(Eg. 2804, f. 214.)

SIR,

I am to craue pardon, that I haue not all this tyme made my apparence at Harling, my daughter, and I are bothe very willing to be ther, but some specyall occasion hathe detayned vs for a tyme, w<sup>ch</sup> we will redeame very shortly, S<sup>r</sup> Robt Knollys hath sent to yow by Skipper, and I will breifly relate the newes this present tyme will afforde. The Installment of the thre Knightes of the Garter my Lo. of Rutlande, S<sup>r</sup> George Villeirs, and my Lo. Lyle<sup>1</sup> was on Sondag last, wher the Kyng was, and cam to Whythall on tuesday, wher I sawe him that day create two Barrons in their Robes, and ther patent redd, S<sup>r</sup> Jhon Hollys and Sir Jhon Roper<sup>2</sup>. This last weeke a yong gentleman M<sup>r</sup> Malby was drowned in the teames, who w<sup>th</sup> in [a] weeke sholde bothe haue bene knighted and marryed to S<sup>r</sup> Olyuer Lambertes<sup>3</sup> daughter. S<sup>r</sup> Oliuer Seniohon<sup>4</sup> is going ouer Lo. Deputy into Irland, and S<sup>r</sup> Henry Dockery,<sup>5</sup> Treasurer. My Lo. Hayes<sup>6</sup> this very day beginnethe his iorney to Rochester and so for fraunce, he and all his company w<sup>th</sup> exceding great brauery. My Lady Wrothes<sup>7</sup> sonn and heyre dyed on Saterdag last, by w<sup>ch</sup> meanes ther is an oncle comme to a great estate. The King beginnethe his progresse next weeke, the quene goethe to Otlandes, wher she remayneth till his Ma<sup>ties</sup> returne out of his progresse.

<sup>1</sup> Robert Sidney, Viscount Lisle, created in 1618 Earl of Leicester.

<sup>2</sup> Sir John Roper, created Baron Teynham, 9 July 1616. Of these two creations, in a letter to Sir D. Carleton, J. Chamberlain remarks, "Sir John Hollis was created Baron of Haughton, Sir John Roper, Baron of Tenem, or Ten M's as Ned Wymarke terms it, being the sum they were rated at." (*Court and Times of James I.*, i. 420.)

<sup>3</sup> Created Baron Lambert of Cavan in February, 1618, and died in July, 1618.

<sup>4</sup> Sir Oliver St. John was appointed Lord Deputy of Ireland 2 July, 1616, recalled in 1622, created Viscount Grandison in 1623 and Baron Tregoz in 1626, and died 30 December, 1630.

<sup>5</sup> Sir Henry Docwra, appointed Treasurer of Ireland in the previous April.

<sup>6</sup> James Hay, Lord Hay (Earl of Carlisle, 1622), was starting for Paris as Ambassador Extraordinary.

<sup>7</sup> Lady Mary Wroth, daughter of Robert Sidney, Earl of Leicester, widow of Sir Robert Wroth (died 1614), whose only son James died 5 July, 1616.

My Lo. Cooke is in great dysgrace w<sup>th</sup> his ma<sup>tie</sup>. S<sup>r</sup> Robert Riche hathe put him to great troble, he is suspended from the counsayle, put by his circuite and all the dysgraces layde vppon him that his aduersaryes can deuyse. Many are very sorry for him. The Quenes Ma<sup>tie</sup> is his greate frende. I pray God sende him many more.

S<sup>r</sup> I haue sent yow the bandes hearin closed, w<sup>ch</sup> you haue so often requested, now you fynde me an honest man, bycause I haue no way hyndred youe. I pray delyuer him the one and forty shyllinges you haue so long ought me, and delyuer it to Skipper, and I will be very thankfull for it. I pray forgett not the horse yow haue ought me so long, for I haue now neade of him, and it is tyme now to haue him. Thus w<sup>th</sup> my best remembrances to y<sup>or</sup> selfe y<sup>or</sup> good wyfe my Cosin Cresnar and his wyfe I take my leaue.

This x<sup>th</sup> July [1616].

---

## INDEX.

---

- Abbot, George, Archbishop of Canterbury, 176  
 Abergavenny, Baron, *v.* Nevill, Henry  
 Abuell, Mr., 179  
 Admiral, Lord, *v.* Howard, Lord Charles  
 Albany, Duke of, *v.* Charles, Prince  
 Alderton, Captain, slain in Holland, 163  
 Alençon, Duke of, 5 *n.*  
 Alexander, *al.* Zinzan, Henry, 173  
 ——— *al.* Zinzan, Sir Sigismond, 173  
 Altham, James, Serjeant-at-law, Baron of the Exchequer, 126, 177  
 Amchora, Marquis d', *v.* Ancre  
 Ampthill Park, 131  
 Ancre, Marquis d', *v.* Concini  
 Andrewe, —, servant to Lord Somerset, 179  
 Anhault, Prince of, 88  
 Anne, Queen of James I., 143, 162, 163, 182  
 Ark Royal, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships, H.M.  
 Arnold, cousin to P. Gawdy, 37  
 Artichokes, mention of, 171  
 Arundel, Earl of, *v.* Howard, Henry  
 Arundell, —, 85  
 ——— Sir Thomas, Lord Arundell of Wardour, 155, 173  
 Ashley, Richard, letter to, from P. Gawdy, 52  
 Atkynson, Anthony, 123  
 Atslowe, Edward, M.D., 83  
 Attleborough, co. Norfolk, 89, 91  
 Audley, Baron, *v.* Tuchet, George  
 Austria, Archduke of, 135  
 Auvergne, Duc d', *v.* Valois, Charles de  
 Aylmer, John, Bishop of London, 86  
 Azores, The, xii., 58  
 Bacon, Mrs. An., 95  
 ——— Anne, wife of Sir Nicholas, 54, 60, 65, 83, 95, 115, 129, 168  
 ——— Anthony, 138  
 ——— Edmund ("Munn") afterwards 2nd Bart., 45, 67, 74, 89, 90, 94, 145  
 ——— Edward, Sheriff of Suffolk, 105, 107  
 ——— Sir Francis, Attorney-General and (1617) Lord Keeper, 103, 143, 179, 180  
 ——— Nan, 60  
 ——— Sir Nathaniel, Sheriff of Norfolk, 65, 96, 104, 105  
 ——— Sir Nicholas, 60, 65, 74, 81, 83, 85, 94, 124, 127, 129, 130, 133, 166, 168, 181  
 Baconsthorpe, co. Norfolk, 176 *n.*  
 Badder, John, 58  
 Badger, Tom, 101  
 Bancroft, Richard, Bishop of London, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, 110, 150, 155, 164  
 Barbary, wars in, 142  
 Barberry, a shrub, mention of, 171

- Barker, Mr., of Ipswich, 12, 117  
 ——— Robert, Serjeant-at-law, 126  
 Barmiston, Sir T., *v.* Barnardiston  
 Barnardiston, Eliz., wife of Sir C. Framlingham, *v.* Framlingham  
 ——— Sir Thomas, 96  
 Barnwell, Sir Patrick, 136  
 Bartlett, Lady, 149  
 Barwick, Sir W., 147  
 ——— Mr., of Thetford, 118, 119, 122, 125, 128, 130  
 ——— Roger, 151, 153  
 Bassett, Sir Robert, 121  
 Bath, co. Somerset, 90, 97, 98  
 Baynam, Sir Edward, 101  
 Bazan, Alonzo de, xii.  
 Beamont, Viscount, suggested title for Sir G. Villiers 179  
 Beaumont, Comte de, *v.* Harlay, Christophe de  
 Bedford, Earl, etc., of, *v.* Russell  
 Benitt, Queen's footman, 69  
 Bennett, Robert, Bishop of Hereford, 126  
 Benningfeild, Sir Harry, 175  
 Berdewell, Elizabeth, viii.  
 Bertie, Mary, wife of Peregrine, 10th Baron Willoughby d'Eresby, xi., 39, 40 *n.*, 41, 118, 127  
 ——— Peregrine, Baron Willoughby d'Eresby, xi., 31, 70, 75  
 ——— Robert, Baron Willoughby d'Eresby, 150, 173  
 Berwick-on-Tweed, 131  
 Bethune, Colonel de, slain in Flanders, 161 *n.*  
 Birche, Samuel, 139  
 Biron, Duc de, *v.* Gontaut, Charles de  
 Blake, Mr., 16  
 Blavet, in Brittany, 75 *n.*  
 Blount, Sir Charles, afterwards Lord Mountjoy, Earl of Devonshire, 31, 103, 108, 145  
 Boissize, Sieur de *v.* Thumery, Jean de  
 Bolton, a servant, 43, 132, 140, 142, 154  
 Bond, Sir George, Lord Mayor of London, 34  
 Bone, Rafe, 96  
 Boughten, Mr., of Warwickshire, 99  
 Boughton, Henry, 100  
 Bourne, —, 25  
 Bowes, Sir Jerome, 120, 150  
 Bowls, game of, 180  
 Bowne, Bridget, 109  
 Bowton, Mr., 121  
 Bowyer, John, of London, 142 *n.*  
 Brampton, *al.* Bramptyn, Mr., cousin of P. Gawdy, 24, 25  
 Bret, Sir Robert, of co. Devon, 129  
 Bridewell, *v.* London  
 Bridgeham, Rectory, co. Norfolk, 112, 113, 114, 116  
 Bridges, Mrs., married to Sir J. Kennedy, 137  
 Brockett, Sir John, 99  
 Bromley, Sir Henry, 130, 146  
 Brooke, Mr., 40  
 ——— Sir Calisthenes, fights a duel with Lord Dunkellin, 103, 108  
 ——— William, Baron Cobham, 21  
 Browne, Lady, 37  
 Browne, Mr., 115  
 ——— Anthony Maria, Viscount Montague, 85  
 ——— Sir Matthew, 137  
 Bruce, Edward, Lord Kinloss, Master of the Rolls, 131  
 Brunswick, Duke of, 135  
 Brydges, Catherine, daughter of Giles, Baron Chandos, 67  
 ——— Elizabeth, daughter of Giles, Baron Chandos, 67 *n.*  
 ——— Giles, Baron Chandos, 67, 70  
 Buckenham, co. Norfolk, 180  
 Buckenham, Edmund, Sheriff of Suffolk, 152  
 Buckhurst, Lord, *v.* Sackville, Thomas  
 Burgh, Richard de, Lord Dunkellin, fights a duel with Sir C. Brooke, 103, 108  
 Burlings, islands off Portugal, 57

- Burnell, Captain, 136  
 Burton, —, 43  
 Bury St. Edmunds, 160  
 Butler, —, cousin to P. Gawdy, 157  
 Button, Captain, 126  
 Byshopp, Mr., 19
- Cadiz, 15 *n*  
 Cæsar, Sir Julius, 130, 176  
 Calais, Captain of, 90  
 Calthorpe, William, cousin of P. Gawdy,  
 11, 21, 37, 39, 65, 75, 76  
 Cambridge, 70, 94, 155, 170  
 Cambridge, Earl of, a suggested title  
 for Lord Chancellor Ellesmere, 179  
 Canterbury, Archbishops of, *v.* Abbot,  
 George; Bancroft, Richard; Whitgift,  
 John  
 Carew, Sir George, 155  
 ——— Tom, 47  
 Carey, George, Lord Hunsdon, Lord  
 Chamberlain, 98  
 ——— Henry, Lord Hunsdon, Lord  
 Chamberlain, 42, 68, 76, 80, 90  
 ——— Sir Henry, taken prisoner in  
 Flanders, 161  
 ——— Sir Robert, 130  
 Carr, Robert, Earl of Somerset, *v.* Kerr  
 Carue, Sir John, Warden of the East  
 Marches, 131  
 Cascaes, rock off Spain, 59  
 Cavendish, William, Baron Cavendish,  
 155  
 Cecil, Catherine, Countess of Salisbury,  
 180  
 ——— James, christened, 181  
 ——— Sir Robert, Viscount Cran-  
 bourne, and Earl of Salisbury, 75,  
 137, 150, 154, 174, 181  
 ——— William, Lord Burghley, Lord  
 Treasurer, 12, 68, 71, 72, 75, 78, 81,  
 95  
 ——— William, Viscount Cranbourne,  
 2nd Earl of Salisbury, 161, 181  
 Chancellors, Lord, *v.* Hatton, Sir  
 Christopher; Egerton, Sir Thomas
- Charles, Prince, Duke of Albany and  
 York, 149, 173, inauguration of, as  
 Prince of Wales, 181  
 Chatham, 147, 149  
 Chatterton, Robin, 111  
 Cheapside, *v.* London  
 Chilton, letters dated at, 137, 138, 140,  
 168, 170  
 Cholmley, Sir Hugh, 31  
 Christenings, Royal: Lord Sussex's  
 daughter, 87; French ambassador's  
 daughter, 124; Princess Mary, 155;  
 Lord Salisbury's son, 181  
 Churchyard, Thomas, poet, death of,  
 144  
 Clarke, Sir Robert, Justice of Assize,  
 110  
 Clere, Sir Edward, 5, 25, 107  
 Clifford, George, Earl of Cumberland,  
 13, 25, 67  
 ——— Sir Nicholas, 82, 91  
 Clifford's Inn, *v.* London  
 Clyfton, Sir Jervis, 131  
 Cob, Sir William, of Norfolk, 136  
 Cobham, Baron, *v.* Brooke, William  
 Cock, Sir Henry, Cofferer of the  
 Household, 128, 129  
 Coke, Bridget, wife of Sir Edward,  
 death of, 94  
 ——— Sir Edward, Attorney-General,  
 etc., 94, 96, 130, 140, 176, 179, 181,  
 183  
 Colby, —, cousin to P. Gawdy, 156  
 Cole, Mr., 121  
 Compton, William, Lord Compton, 129  
 Concini, Concino, 177  
 Conde, Prince de, 177  
 Coningsby, Ralph(?), 82  
 Cooke, Sir John, Recorder of London,  
 130  
 Coote, Mr., 21, 101  
 ——— Nan, 109  
 Coppinger, Mr., servant to Lord  
 Somerset, 179  
 Cordell, Edward, 20  
 Cornwallis, Mr., 70

- Cornwallis, Sir Charles, 152  
 ——— Sir Thomas, 84  
 ——— Sir William, 131, 142  
 Cotton, Mr., 88, 90, 91  
 Coventry, Thomas, Serjeant-at-law, 126,  
     made Justice of Common Pleas, 161  
 Coxcombe, —, 165  
 Cranbourne, Viscounts, *v.* Cecil  
 Cresner, —, cousin to P. Gawdy, 105,  
     183  
 Crewe, Sir Randolph, 179  
 Crispe, Robin, 13, 34  
 Croft, Sir James, 21  
 Croke, John, Serjeant-at-law, 126  
 Crompton, Captain, 145, 146  
 Cromwell, Sir Oliver, of Hinchinbrooke,  
     130  
 Crooke, Sir John, 150  
 Crosse, Captain, 15  
 Crowsen, —, 139  
 Crows Hall, in Debenham, co. Suffolk,  
     x, 60, 66, 155, 165  
 Culford, 169  
 Cumberland, Earl of, *v.* Clifford, George  
  
 Dacombe, Sir Thomas, Chancellor of  
     the Duchy of Lancaster, 179  
 Dacre, Francis, 46  
 Dale, Valentine, D.C.L., 21  
 Daller, Diogio, xiii., 64  
 Danby, Sir Robert, 81  
 Daniel, Samuel, poet, 176 *n*  
 Daniell, William, Serjeant-at-law, 70  
 Danvers, Henry, Lord Danvers, 148  
 Darcy, Lord, 160, 164  
 ——— John, of Chiche, 76  
 ——— Margaret, ix., 76 *n*  
 ——— Thomas, of Tolleshunt Darcy,  
     ix., 76  
 Daubney, Mr., 94  
 Davy, "Mother," 37  
 Debdin, Mr., 11  
 Deben, River, co. Suffolk, 60  
 Deckham, *v.* Dacombe  
 Defiance, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships, H.M.  
  
 Delight, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships, H.M.  
 Denmark, christening of the king's son,  
     135; the king made K.G., *ib.*  
 Denny, Edward, Governor of Kerry, etc.,  
     27  
 Denny, Sir Edward, Baron Denny, of  
     Waltham, 152  
 Derby, Countess of, *v.* Stanley, Alice  
 ——— Earls of, *v.* Stanley, Henry;  
     Stanley, Ferdinando  
 Devereux, Frances, Countess of Essex,  
     141, 175 *n*  
     *v.* also Kerr, Frances  
 ——— Robert, 2nd Earl of Essex, 25,  
     51, 67, 75, 77, 78, 79, 80, 82, 88, 97,  
     98, 99, 103, 108, 111, 112  
 ——— Robert, 3rd Earl of Essex, 161,  
     176  
 Devonshire, Earl of, *v.* Blount, Charles  
 Dewe, Mr., 167  
 Digby, Mall, 108  
 Dingwall, Lord, *v.* Preston, Richard  
 Disdain, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships, H.M.  
 Docwra, Sir Henry, Treasurer of Ireland,  
     98, 182  
 Dodderidge, Sir John, Solicitor-General,  
     152  
 Dorset, Earl of, *v.* Sackville, Thomas  
 Douglas, Archibald, parson of Glasgow,  
     Scottish Ambassador, 24 *n*  
 ——— Sir Robert, 173  
 ——— Thomas, hanged, 157  
 Doyly, E—, 105  
 Drake, a servant, 44  
 ——— Sir Francis, 15, 30, 38, 44, 68  
 Drury, Sir Dru, Gentleman Usher of the  
     Privy Chamber, 6, 19, 27, 74, 131  
 ——— Lady, 43, 65, 79, 83  
 ——— Sir Robert, 105  
 Drury Lane, *v.* London  
 Dudley, Anne, widow of Ambrose, Earl  
     of Warwick. 141  
 ——— Lettice, Countess of Leicester,  
     117  
 ——— Robert, Earl of Leicester, 10, 13,  
     24, 26, 31, 82

Dudley, Sir Robert, 155  
 Duels: Sir C. Brooke and Lord  
 Dunkellin, 103; Marquis d'Ancre with  
 a French Marquis (1614), 177;  
 French edict against (1614), 177  
 Dunkellin, Lord, *v.* Burgh, Richard de  
 Dunn, —, 93  
 Dutch news, 124  
 Dutton, Tom, 101  
 Dyve, Sir Lewis, of Bromham, 27

Edmondes, Sir Thomas, 130  
 Effingham, Lord, *v.* Howard, Charles  
 Egerton, Thomas, Earl of Ellesmere,  
 Lord Keeper, etc., 99, 107, 108, 109,  
 157, 176, 179  
 Elizabeth, Queen, 5 *n.*, 18, 22, 25, 32, 35,  
 38 *n.*, 42, 43, 51, 53, 68, 70, 75, 78,  
 81, 82, 85, 96, 103, 124  
 Elizabeth, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships, H.M.  
 Ellesmere, Earl of, *v.* Egerton, Thomas  
 Elmes, Sir Garrett, 136  
 Eppes, —, prisoner in Newgate, 129  
 Eppes, Mr., slain in Flanders, 161  
 Espicher, Cape, 59  
 Essex, Earls of, *v.* Devereux, Robert  
 Essex House, *v.* London  
 Evans, Mr., 154  
 — Mrs., 154  
 Exchequer, Lord Chief Baron of the,  
*v.* Tanfield, Laurence  
 Eye, co. Suffolk, ix., xiv., xv., 83, 84, 127

Fairfax, Sir Thomas, 131  
 Falmouth, 57  
 Farnese, Alexander, Prince of Parma,  
 27, 67  
 Felton, Mum—, 114  
 Fenner, Edward, Judge of Queen's  
 Bench, 79  
 Fermat, Tom, 78  
 Ferrol, 75  
 Ffuilliams, Sir W., *v.* Williams  
 Fiennes, Richard, Lord Saye, 136

Finisterre, Cape, 59  
 Firthe, Sir Theo., 107  
 Fitz Gerald, Lucy, Countess of Kildare,  
 129  
 Fitzwalter, Viscount, *v.* Ratcliffe, Henry  
 Fitzwilliams, Sir William, Lord Deputy  
 of Ireland, 18  
 Flanders, xi., 21, 24, 26, 51, 121, 161,  
*v.* also Holland; Netherlands  
 Fleming, Sir Thomas, Solicitor-General,  
 appointed Chief Baron of the  
 Exchequer, 150, 151, 152  
 Flemming, Captain, 62  
 Fletcher, Richard, Bishop of Worcester,  
 86  
 Flores, in the Azores, xii., 62  
 Flowerdew, Edward, Sergeant-at-law, 2  
 Fortescue, Mr., 105, 106, 116, 170  
 — Dudley, of Faulkbourn, xiv.,  
 132 *n.*, 133  
 — Henry, xvi.  
 — John, Master of the Great  
 Wardrobe, and Chancellor of the  
 Exchequer, 44, 70, 75, 131, 143 *n.*, 144  
 Foscue, *v.* Fortescue  
 Foster, Sir Thomas, Serjeant-at-law, 126,  
 152  
 Fowler, Mr. and Mrs., 99, 100  
 Fox, Mr., 13  
 Framlingham, Sir Charles, x., 26, 40, 51,  
 60, 66, 68, 84  
 — Elizabeth, 2nd wife of Sir  
 Charles, 37, 39, 40, 50, 60, 70, 83  
 France, English mission to, 38 *n.*;  
 meeting of ambassadors, 75; Henri IV.  
 to be K.G., 78; treasons in, 123;  
 Henri IV. sends presents to Queen  
 Elizabeth, etc., 141; discontent of the  
 French Court, 177; marriage of  
 Louis XIII. to Anne of Spain, and of  
 his sister to the Infante, *ib.*  
 Frere, G. E., of Roydon, a former owner  
 of the Gawdy papers, viii.  
 Frere, J. T., of Roydon, a former owner  
 of the Gawdy papers, viii.  
 Freston, —, cousin of P. Gawdy, 84



Frias, Mathias de, Spanish prisoner, xiv., 71  
 Frobisher, Sir Martin, 68, 88  
 Fuentes, Conde de, *v.* Toledo, Pedro de Fullwood Lane, near Gray's Inn, *v.* London  
 Gardiner, Lady, 177  
 ——— Sir Robert, 93  
 Gargrave, —, maid of honour, 150  
 ——— Sir Richard, 128, 150  
 Garland, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships, H.M.  
 Garret, Mrs., 3  
 Gascoigne, —, 100  
 Gaule, Amadis de, romance of, 67  
 Gawdy papers, the, account of, vii., former owners of, *ib.*  
 Gawdy family, the, account of, viii., ix.  
 Gawdy, Anne, wife of Bassingbourne G., sen., letters to, from her son Philip, 3, 5, 8-11, 15; references to, viii., ix., x., 13  
 ——— Anne, wife of Bassingbourne G., jun., letters to, from Philip Gawdy, 28, 33, 49; references to, x., xiv., 11, 13, 14, 16, 20, 21, 26, 38, 45, 52, 66, 69, 70, 76, 81, 85  
 ——— Anthony, uncle of Philip G., 10, 13, 14, 18, 20, 21, 24, 26, 31, 32, 42, 43, 47, 48, 53, 59, 60, 65, 69, 74, 76, 80, 83, 84, 85, 92, 93, 104, 109, 113, 117, 118, 120, 134, 138, 139, 166, 167, 171, 172  
 ——— Bassingbourne, sen. (d. 1590), letters to, from his son Philip, 1, 2, 3, 7, 12, 14, 16, 18, 19, 22, 24, 27, 29, 30, 32, 34, 38, 45, 48; references to, viii., ix., 44, married to Margaret Darcy, ix., 76 *n.*  
 ——— Bassingbourne, jun. (d. 1606), letters to, from his brother Philip, 20, 36, 39-44, 50, 53-172; references to, viii.-xiv., 10, 11, 14, 15, 16, 19, 20, 24, 26, 75  
 ——— [Gaudi] Sir Brews, viii.  
 ——— Bridget, wife of Philip, xiii., xiv.,

92, 93, 94, 101, 104, 108, 109, 110, 111, 122, 132, 133, 138, 150, 151, 155, 164, 168, 170, 172  
 Gawdy, Sir Charles, son of Sir B. Gawdy, xvi., xvii., 78, 172, 174, 180, 181  
 ——— Clipsby [knighted 1603], 126, 139  
 ——— Lady Dorothy, second wife of Sir B. Gawdy, 93, 107, 109, 110, 117, 138, 139, 145, 150, 151, 153, 155, 167, 182; letter to, from P. Gawdy, 122  
 ——— Dorothy, daughter of Philip, xiv., 164, 174  
 ——— Framlingham, letters to, from his uncle, Philip Gawdy, 173, 175, 178, 181; references to, xv., 60, 68, 78, 138, 158-160, 165, 166, 172; release to, by his uncle Philip for the latter's annuity, 174  
 ——— Sir Francis, Queen's Serjeant, Judge of Queen's Bench, Lord Chief Justice of Common Pleas, 10, 43, 81, 108-111, 134, 151, 156, 160, 161  
 ——— Francis, son of Philip, 152  
 ——— George, 153, 181  
 ——— Sir Henry, K.B., of Claxton Hall, 134, 139, 156, 164, 166  
 ——— Margaret, second wife of Bassingbourne G., sen., ix., 44, 49, 76 *n.*  
 ——— Philip, general account of, ix-xvii.; at Clifford's Inn, 1-8, plays the lute, 4, 6; intends to lie altogether at the Court, 14; resides temporarily at the Old Bailey, 18; waits on the Queen at the tilt, 25; has lawsuit with Mrs. Wentworth, 35; contemplates journey to Flanders with Lady Wiloughby, 39-41; sails as a volunteer with Lord Howard's expedition in 1591, 53; is on board the *Revenge*, 55-63; is a prisoner at Lisbon, 64; returns to England, 65; arranges with the Council about his ransom, 71; hopes to live at Harling on the death

- of his sister-in-law, 86, 87 ; first mentions his wife, 93 ; hopes to become Burgess for Eye, 127 ; waits upon the King at table, 132 ; bond concerning a contemplated journey to Jerusalem xvi., 172
- Gawdy, Philip, letters to his father, 1, 2, 3, 7, 12, 14, 16, 18, 19, 22, 24, 27, 29, 30, 32, 34, 38, 45, 48
- letters to his mother, 3, 5, 8-11, 15
- letters to his brother Bassingbourne, 20, 36, 39-44, 50, 53-172
- letters to Anne Gawdy, his sister-in-law, 28, 33, 49
- letter to R. Ashley, 52
- letter to his sister-in-law, Lady Dorothy Gawdy, 122
- letter to Sir N. Bacon, 144
- letters to his nephew Framlingham, 173, 175, 178, 181
- bond concerning his journey to Jerusalem, xvi., 172
- release of an annuity, 174
- Philip, cousin of Philip Gawdy, 83, 94
- Sir Thomas, Justice of Queen's Bench, death of, ix., 43 *n.*
- Gawdy Hall, in Redenhall, co. Norfolk, viii., 139
- Geggons, Dr., *v.* Jegon, John
- Geneva, Ambassador from, 135
- Geteenbargen, in Holland, 75
- Gilbert, Sir John, 121
- Godden, Sir Francis, *v.* Goodwin
- Goldingham, Mr., 13
- Goldsmith, Mr., 42
- Gontaut, Charles de, Duc de Biron, 123
- Good, Mr., 50
- Goodwin, Sir Francis, M.P., 143, 144
- Gorge, Sir Thomas, 13, 24
- Gosling, Mr., 152
- Gramaliell, Count, 121
- Gravesend, 48
- Gray, Sir Henry, 22
- Sir John, 130
- *v.* also Grey
- Graye, —, a servant, 70, 81, 83, 86, 166
- Greenfeild, Sir R., *v.* Grenville
- Greenwich, 12, 43, 91, 144
- Grenville, Sir Richard, xii., xiii., 53-63
- Gresham, Mr., 23, 25
- Grevell, Sir Edward, 131
- Grey, Henry, Lord Grey, 103
- Grice, —, 95, 119, 125, 133
- Grigs, —, a servant, 42
- Grims, —, 136
- Grimston, Dr., 140
- Groning, siege of, 88
- Groyne, The, 59
- Grymson, —, cousin of P. Gawdy, 84
- Guise, Duc de, 177
- Gurney, Daniel, of Runcton, a former owner of the Gawdy papers, vii.
- Guybon, Mr. 117
- Gwyn, Davy, 42
- Gyfford, Sir George, 99
- Halton, Robert, Serjeant-at-law, 2
- *v.* also Houghton
- Hamburg, 57
- Hamond, William, of Swaffham Bulbeck, viii.
- Hampstead, co. Middlesex, 70
- Harborne, William, late Ambassador to Turkey, 71
- Hare, Hugh, 27
- Harlay, Christophe, Comte de Beaumont, 122
- Harleston, co. Norfolk, 83
- Harling, co. Norfolk, viii., x., 20, 22, 42, 51, 52, 59, 62, 111, 138, 140, 147, 151, 153, 168, 172, 174, 182
- Harrington, Sir Henry, 96
- Harris, Thomas, Serjeant-at-law, 126, 160
- Harvy, Mr., 54, 55, 60
- Haslerig, Mr., murdered, 150

- Hastings, Dorothy, Countess of Huntingdon, 154
- Hatton, Sir Christopher, Lord Chancellor, 21, 25, 29, 34, 42, 48, 51
- Havers, Mrs., xvi., 158, 159
- Hawking, 76, 78
- Hay, James, Lord Hay, Ambassador Extraordinary to France, 173, 180, 182
- Hayes, Captain 121
- Sir James, 137
- Haynes, William, 99, 100
- Hayward, Mrs., 20
- Heale, John, Serjeant-at-law, etc., 94
- 142, 149, 150
- Heigham, Sir Clement, 168
- Hele *v.* Heale
- Hengham, co. Norfolk, 80
- Henningham, Sir A., *v.* Heveningham
- Henri III., IV., of France, *v.* France
- Henrico, servant, 71, 74
- Herbert, Lady Ann, 129
- Mary, widow of Henry, 2nd Earl of Pembroke, 137
- Sir Philip, cr. Baron Herbert and Earl of Montgomery, 130, 150, 154, 173
- Susan, Countess of Montgomery, 180
- William, Earl of Pembroke, 147, 148, 173, 180
- Hereford, Bishop of, *v.* Bennett, Robert
- Heretic, burnt at Smithfield, 174
- Hertford, Countess of, *v.* Seymour, Katherine
- Earl of, *v.* Seymour, Edward
- Heveningham, Sir Arthur, 76, 78, 104, 107, 145
- Heydon, Sir Christopher, 107, 176 *n*
- Heyward, Mrs., 11
- Sir Rowland, 76
- Highgate, co. Middlesex, 70, 85, 86
- Hihum [*?* Heigham], Sir John, 84
- Hinningham, Sir Arthur, *v.* Heveningham
- Hinshaw, —, silk merchant, 151
- Hix, —, of Cheapside, 123
- Hobart, Henry, Serjeant-at-law, etc., 126, 161, 176
- Holdiche, cousin of P. Gawdy, 109, 110, 125
- Holland, war in, 163
- v.* also Flanders; Netherlands
- Hollinshed's Chronicle, reference to, 99
- Hollis, Sir John, cr. Baron Hollis, 181, 182
- Holstein, Alric, Duke of, visits London, 149, 154, 155
- Holton, Sir Richard, *v.* Houghton
- Honing, Sir Edward, xv.
- Horne, Mrs., maid to Lady Somerset 179
- Hornewell, —, 178, 181
- Houghton, Sir Richard, 96
- Houghton, Robert, Serjeant-at-law, 126, 161
- Howard, Lady Catherine, 161.
- Lord Charles, of Effingham, Lord Admiral, 18, 23, 25, 29, 36, 71, 75, 76, 80, 92, 123, 132
- Elizabeth, Lady Howard de Walden, 181
- Lady Frances, 161
- Lord Henry, cr. Earl of Northampton [1604], 48, 103, 131
- Katharine, Countess of Nottingham, death of, 126
- Philip, Earl of Arundel, 48
- Theophilus, Lord Howard of Walden, 173
- Thomas, Duke of Norfolk, 82
- Lord Thomas, cr. Earl of Suffolk [1603], xii., 29, 53, 57, 58, 64, 68, 112, 131
- Thomas, Earl of Arundel, 145, 148
- Lord William, 48, 110
- Howe, —, of Sudbury, 116
- Hubbard, Henry, *v.* Hobart
- Huddleston, Henry, *v.* Hurleston
- Hunnings, Mr., 83, 84

Hunningham, *v.* Heveningham  
 Hunsdon, Lords, *v.* Carey  
 Huntingdon, Lady, *v.* Hastings, Dorothy  
 Hurleston, *al.* Huddleston, Henry, of  
     Pattiswick, 162  
 Hutton, Richard, Serjeant-at-law, 132

Inns, the Bell at Smithfield, 30, 33; the  
     Swan, on Bankside, 93  
 Ireland, 18, 27, 42, 96-98, 108, 113, 115,  
     116, 126  
 Islington, co. Middlesex, 154  
 Italian juggler, at court, 122

J—, Captain Sir Henry, going to Persia,  
     174

James VI. of Scotland, 51; and as  
 James I. of England, xv., 128-130,  
     137, 140, 143, 144, 152, 154, 162,  
     163, 181, 182

Jegon, John, Bishop of Norwich, 126.

Jenkinson, Mr. 115

—— Richard, Sheriff of Norfolk, 105,  
     107

Jermin, Robert, 6

—— *v.* also Jermyn

Jermy, Mr., 23, 26

—— Francis, Sheriff of Suffolk, 29

Jermyn, John, 23

—— Sir Robert, 166

—— Sir Thomas, 108, 131, 180

Jerusalem, bond for P. Gawdy's journey  
     to, xvi., 172

Johnson, —, of Buckenham, 116

Kay, Sir John, xv.

Keepers, Lord, *v.* Bacon, Sir Francis;  
     Egerton, Thomas, Lord Ellesmere;  
     Puckering, Sir John

Kelly, Mr., 76, 152

Kempe, Mall, 109

Kendall, Harry, 133, 158

Kennedy, Sir John, 137

Kenninghall, 48

Ker, Robert, of Cessford, Earl of Rox-  
     burgh, 175

Kerr, *al.* Carr, Frances, Countess of  
     Somerset, condemned and pardoned,  
     178

—— Robert, Earl of Somerset, mar-  
     ried to Frances, Countess of Essex,  
     175, condemned to death but par-  
     doned, 178

Kerry, Mr., 149

Keys, Mrs., 89

Kildare, Countess of, *v.* FitzGerald,  
     Elizabeth

Killigrew, —, 108

King, John, Bishop of London, 176

Kinloss, Lord, *v.* Bruce, Edward

Kirke, Mr., 9, 12

Kitson, Elizabeth, wife of Sir Thomas,  
     79, 158-160, 164

Knolles, Sir Francis, 31

Knollys, Lettice, married to F. Gawdy,  
     xv.

—— Sir Robert, 182

Knyvett, Mr., 78, 179

—— Mrs., 123

—— Philip, 152

Kyream, Mr., 27

Lahorne, Captain of H.M. Revenge, *v.*  
     Langharn

Lake, Sir Thomas, *v.* Leake

Lambert, Sir Oliver, 182

Lambeth, co. Surrey, 70, 85

Lane, Rafe, 33

Langharn, *al.* Lahorne, William, 53,  
     56, 61, 62

Laurence, Mr., 83

Leake, Sir Thomas, Clerk of the Signet,  
     130

Lee, Sir Henry, 13

—— Sir Richard, of Billesley, 98

—— Sir Robert, Lord Mayor of  
     London 130

- "Leicester, Earl of," suggested title for  
 Sir G. Villiers (1614), 179  
 Leicester, Earls, etc., of, *v.* Dudley  
 Leighton, Sir Thomas, Governor of  
 Guernsey, 38, 75 *n*  
 Le Mer, David, Dutchman, 72, 73  
 Le Neve, Oliver, of Great Witchingham,  
 a former owner of the Gawdy papers,  
 vii.  
 ——— Peter, Norroy King of Arms, a  
 former owner of the Gawdy papers,  
 vii.  
 Lennox, Duke of, *v.* Stuart, Ludovic  
 Leveson, Admiral Sir Richard, 123  
 Lewkenor, Sir Lewis, of Sussex, 129  
 Leyton, co. Essex, 146  
 Leyton, Sir Thomas, *v.* Leighton  
 Lion's Whelp, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships,  
 H.M.  
 Lisbon, reported capture of, by the Dutch,  
 71; references to, xiii., 64, 96, 123  
 Lisle, Viscount, *v.* Sydney, Robert  
 Littleton, John, 112  
 Lochoundes, Captain, *v.* Lahorne  
 London, the plague in, 67, 76, 77;  
 illegal pressing for the Army in  
 Flanders, 120; Lord Mayor's Show,  
 162  
 ——— Streets, etc., in  
     Bridewell, 108, 177  
     Cheapside, 123, 162  
     Cliffords' Inn, x., 3-8  
     Drury Lane, 154  
     Essex House, 91  
     Fullwood Lane, 160  
     Newgate, 125, 129  
     St. Paul's, 42, 43  
     Savoy, the, 32  
     Smithfield, 30, 33, 121, 174  
     Somerset House, 29, 42, 43, 154  
     Southwark, 78, 154, 163  
     Strand, 28  
     Tower, the, 84, 90  
     Tyburn, 85  
     Whitehall, 141, 147  
 London, Bishops of, *v.* Aylmer, John;  
     Bancroft, Richard; King, John;  
     Vaughan, Richard  
 Lopez, Roderigo, Queen's Physician, 81,  
 85  
 Lorraine, Catherine, daughter of Charles,  
 Duc de Mayenne, 121 *n*  
 ——— Duke of, 135  
 Losse, Sir Hugh, 142  
 Lottery, at Somerset House, 154  
 Lounde, Mr. 67, 76  
 Lovell, Mr., 42, 46, 104, 108, 168  
 ——— Sir Thomas, 116, 123, 152  
 Low, Sir Thomas, Lord Mayor of  
 London, 148  
 Lubeck, 58  
 Lucy, Sir Edmund, of co. Warwick, 129  
 Lumley, John, Lord Lumley, 74  
 Luson, Sir Richard, *v.* Leveson  
 Lycence, Dr., 97  
 Lynn, co. Norfolk  
  
 Malby, Mr., drowned in the Thames,  
 182  
 Manners, Captain, slain in Flanders, 161  
 ——— Lady Bridget, 89, 90  
 ——— Francis, Earl of Rutland, in-  
 stalled K.G., 182  
 ——— Roger, Earl of Rutland, 70, 135  
 Manning, a servant, 166, 167, 169  
 Mansfeld, Sir Robert, 107  
 Manwaring, Mr., of Cheshire, 121  
 Margettes, (? Margate), 31  
 Martin Mar-prelate, 74  
 Martin, Tom, of Palgrave, a former  
 owner of the Gawdy papers, vii.  
 Mary, Princess, daughter of James I.,  
 christened, 155  
 Maurice, Prince, 75, 124  
 Mawe, Mr., 95, 133, 167  
 Meautis, Sir Thomas, 173  
 Medicis, Maria de, Queen Regent of  
 France, 177  
 Mendham, co. Suffolk, 84

Michilborne, Sir Edward, reported slain  
in Holland, 163  
Middleton, Sir Thomas, Lord Mayor of  
London, 177  
Modena, Duke of, 42  
Mompesson, Sir Richard, of co. Bucks,  
129  
Monson, Sir Thomas, Master of the  
Tower Armoury, 179  
—— Captain William, 64  
Montague, Viscount, *v.* Browne,  
Anthony Maria  
Montgomery, Countess of, *v.* Herbert,  
Susan  
—— Earl of, *v.* Herbert, Philip  
Moon, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships, H.M.  
More, Ro—, 177  
Morgan, Captain, slain in Flanders, 161  
—— Sir Thomas, 31  
Morris, Mr., 149, 151, 152, 153  
Mountjoy, Lord, *v.* Blount, Charles  
Munioye, Mr., 77  
Munnby, —, 60  
Murrell Mr., 22  
Muryell, Thomas, xvi.  
Muscovy, 98  
Musket, —, 114

Netherlands, 39 *n.*, 67  
*v.* also Flanders; Holland  
Nevers, Charles, Duc de, 121  
Nevill, Lady, 51  
Neville, Henry, Baron Abergavenny, 10  
Newbery, Mall, 99, 108, 109  
Newgate, *v.* London  
Newhaven, 57  
Newport, Captain, 126  
Nicholas, Mr., 98  
Nichols, Augustine, Serjeant-at-law, 126  
Nonsuch, 132, 155, 163, 165  
Norreys, Francis, Lord Norreys 129  
Norris, Sir John, 44, 86, 88  
North, Mr., 84

North, Dudley, 3rd Baron North, 173  
—— Frances, Lady North, 147  
—— Sir Henry, 105, 111  
—— Roger, Lord North, 70, 111  
Northampton, Marchioness of, *v.* Parr,  
Helena  
Northumberland, Earl and Countess of,  
*v.* Percy,  
Norwich, Bishop of, *v.* Jegon, John  
Nunne, —, uncle of Philip Gawdy, 4,  
55, 61, 117  
—— John, of Bury, xvii., 172

Oath of supremacy to be taken by all  
the King's servants, etc., 163  
Oatlands, 74, 132, 147, 157, 182  
O'Neill, Hugh, Earl of Tyrone, 97, 108,  
115, 129  
Ostend, 34, 115, 118, 124, 126, 144  
Osterley, co. Middlesex, 85  
Overbury, Sir Thomas, 78 *n.*  
Owen, —, 100  
Oxford, Countess of, *v.* Vere, Anne

Paddy, Dr., 140  
Paddy, Sir William, xiv.  
Pakington, Sir John, 25  
Palavicino, Sir Horatio, 22  
Palgrave, —, 75  
Parker, Sir John, of Sussex, 129  
Parliament, 48, 140, 142, 143, 147, 148  
Parma, Duke and Prince of, *v.* Farnese,  
Alex.  
Parr, Helena, Marchioness of North-  
ampton, 124, 128  
Parry, Sir Thomas, 124, 137 *n.*, 179  
Past, Mr., 5  
Paston, Bridget, wife of Sir E. Coke, *v.*  
Coke  
—— Clement, 23, 29  
—— Sir William, 105  
Pawlet, Sir Amyas, 23

- Payne, Mr., 85  
 Payton, Dorothy, wife of Sir John Payton, 126  
     — Sir Henry, 173  
     — Sir John, Sheriff of Norfolk, 43, 120  
 Pedds, a servant, 84  
 "Penelope," Mrs, 158, 159  
 Penry, John, 74  
 Percy, Dorothy, wife of Henry, Earl of Northumberland, 155  
     — Henry, Earl of Northumberland, 131, 164  
 Peres, Don Antonio, 91  
 Perrott, Sir John, 18 *n.*, 44  
 Persey, Sir Charles, 131  
 Persia, 142, 174  
 Phelip, Lewcas, Dutch merchant, 71, 73  
 Phelips, Edward, 126  
 Philipps, Edward, Speaker of the House of Commons, 148  
 Phillippes, Mr., of the Middle Temple, 14  
 Phillips, Edward, Serjeant-at-law, 126  
 Pigott, Captain, taken prisoner in Flanders, 161  
     — Frances, of the Inner Temple, 2  
 Pinchbacke, —, 161  
 Pinchin, Mr., 13  
 Pitcher, Cape, *v.* Espicher, Cape  
 Pitchforke, Mr., 151  
 Plague, remedy for, 9, in London, etc., 67, 76, 77, 155  
 Plater, Mr., 105  
 Plymouth, xii., 53, 54, 56, 57, 121  
 Poley, Sir John, 173  
 Portsmouth, 85, 123  
 Portugal, 44, 71, 96,  
     *v.* also Lisbon  
 Portuguese, hung at Tyburn, 85  
 Powell, Mr., 93, 94, 111, 166, 168  
 Pressing for the army, proclamation on, 120  
 Preston, Richard, Lord Dingwall, 173  
 Procter, Sir Stephen, 176  
 Progresses, Royal, 70, 85, 124, 147  
 Puckering, Sir John, Lord Keeper, 65, 70, 74, 76, 78, 85  
 Punishment of criminals, 100, 123  
 Pygott, *v.* Pigott  
 Radcliffe, Mr., brother to Sir J. Radcliffe, taken prisoner in Flanders, 161  
 Raillyn, Anthony, xvii.  
 Raleigh, Lady, 152  
 Raleigh, Sir Walter, xii., 68, 71, 72, 121, 137, 142  
 Ratcliffe, Mr., *v.* Radcliffe  
 Ratcliffe, Mrs., maid of honour, 103  
     — Sir Alexander, 103  
     — Bridget, Countess of Sussex 99  
     — Henry, Viscount Fitzwalter, 176  
     — Honora, Countess of Sussex, 68  
     — Robert, Earl of Sussex, 82, 87, 99, 105, 129, 176  
 Raulyn, Mr., of Attleborough, 179  
 Raynsford, Mr., Groom of the King's Chamber, drowned, 141  
 Redenball, co Norfolk, viii., 43  
 Redgrave, co. Suffolk, 118, 120, 166, 168, 171  
 Revenge, the, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships, H.M.  
 Rich, Sir Edwin, 131  
     — Penelope, wife of Robert, 3rd Baron Rich, 98, 129, 164  
     — Robert, 3rd Baron Rich, 164  
     — Sir Robert, 183  
 Richmond, co. Surrey, 29, 31, 103, 124, 157  
 Ridgeway, Sir Thomas, 98  
 Rochester, co. Kent, 182  
 Rodney, Sir Edward, 176  
 Rogers, George, Rector of Bridgeham, 112, 113, 114, 116  
 Roo, Sir John, 161  
 Roper, Sir John, cr. Baron Teynham, 182  
 Rouen, 38, 103  
 Roxburgh, Earl of, *v.* Ker, Robert

- Royston, co. Hertfordshire, 80, 141,  
 152, 154  
 Russell, Edward, Earl of Bedford, 70  
 ——— Lucy, Countess of Bedford, 135  
 Rutland, Earls of, *v.* Manners  
  
 Sackville, Thomas, Lord Buckhurst,  
 Earl of Dorset, Lord Treasurer, 51,  
 70, 75, 85, 142, 150, 151  
 Sagres, Cape, 59  
 St. John, Sir Oliver, Lord Deputy of  
 Ireland, 116, 182  
 St. Julian's Castle, 123  
 St. Lucas, in Andalusia, 58  
 St. Michael, island in the Azores, 61  
 St. Michael, Order of, 82  
 St. Paul's Cathedral, *v.* London  
 St. Vincent, Cape, xii., 58  
 Salisbury, Earls, etc., of, *v.* Cecil  
 Savage, Mrs. Frances, 91  
 ——— Sir John, 96  
 Savile, John, Serjeant-at-law, etc., 94  
 Savoy, Duke of, 93  
 Savoy, The, *v.* London  
 Saye, Lord, *v.* Fiennes, Richard  
 Scotland, 24, 84, 150  
 ——— conspiracy to kill James VI.,  
 123  
 Scots, Mary, Queen of, 10  
 Scott, Catharine, wife of Sir John Scott,  
 126  
 Scrope, Philadelphia, wife of Thomas,  
 Lord Scrope, 129  
 Scudamore, Lady, 120  
 Sebastian, King of Portugal, 96  
 Scilly, 57  
 Selby, Sir John, 173  
 Seman, —, 90  
 Serieant, Thomas, 19  
 Seymor, Mr., 176  
 Seymour, Edward, Earl of Hertford, 121  
 ——— Katherine, Countess of Hert-  
 ford, 181  
 Sharpe, Dr., 147  
 Sheffield, Edmund, Baron Sheffield, 29  
  
 Shelton, Sir Ralph, 180  
 Shering, —, 52  
 Ships, H. M., Ark Royal, 29 *n*  
 ——— Defiance, xi., 61  
 ——— Delight, 57  
 ——— Disdain, 59  
 ——— Elizabeth, 30  
 ——— Garland, 64 *n*  
 ——— Lion's Whelp, 57  
 ——— Moon, 59  
 ——— Revenge, xii., xiii., 30, 53, 55,  
 56, 57, 63  
 ——— Triumph, 29  
 ——— Victory, 29 *n*  
 Shirley, Sir Anthony, 82  
 ——— John, Serjeant-at-law, 132  
 ——— Sir Thomas, sen., of Wiston, 31  
 Skinner, Mr., 12, 34, 68  
 Skipper, —, 132, 182, 183  
 Smith, Sir John, 41  
 ——— Sir Thomas, Clerk of the  
 Council, 130  
 Smithfield, *v.* London  
 Smyth, Mr., 160  
 Snelling, Sir George, 150  
 Snigg, George, Serjeant-at-law, 13  
 Somerset, Earl of, *v.* Kerr, Robert  
 ——— Lady Elizabeth, 89  
 ——— Elizabeth, Countess of Wor-  
 cester, 129  
 ——— Lady Katharine, maid of  
 honour, 89  
 ——— Sir Thomas, 174  
 ——— William, Earl of Worcester, 47  
 Somerset House, *v.* London  
 Southampton, Earl of, *v.* Wrothesley,  
 Henry  
 Southwark, 78, 163  
 Southwell, Elizabeth, 150  
 ——— Frances, daughter of Sir Robert,  
 176  
 ——— Sir Robert, 23, 30, 58  
 ——— Lady, widow of Sir Robert, 101,  
 105, 106  
 Spain, naval affairs with England, 15,  
 18, 27, 30, 53-63, 75; news from, 24,



- 103; report of peace with, 103, 141;  
 Spanish troops for Ireland, 115, 116;  
 affairs with France, 123; return of  
 Lord C. Howard from, 157; Spanish  
 ship taken by the Dutch, 163;  
 marriage of the Infante with Elizabeth  
 of France, 177; marriage of the  
 Infanta with Louis XIII., *ib.*  
 Spelman, Sir Henry, Sheriff of Norfolk,  
 152  
 Spencer, Richard, 106  
 Spilman, *v.* Spelman  
 Spring, Mrs. 93  
 ——— Sir William, 169  
 Stafford, Edward, Baron Stafford, 70  
 Stanhope, Jane, married to Viscount  
 Fitzwalter 176  
 ——— Sir John, Vice-Chamberlain,  
 of the Household, 98, 121, 128; *cr.*  
 Baron Stanhope of Harrington, 154  
 ——— Sir Michael, 176  
 Stanley, Alice, Countess of Derby, 82  
 ——— Ferdinando, Earl of Derby, 82  
 ——— Harry, Earl of Derby, 21  
 Starchamber, 101, 123, 155, 176  
 Stinke, Captain, 14  
 "Stockfish, Dr.," 97  
 Stone and Hix, silk merchants, 102  
 Stone, Sir William, of London, 146  
 Stourton, Edward, Lord Stourton, 162  
 Strand, The, *v.* London  
 Strangman, family of, account of, *xiv.*  
 Strangman, Bartholomew, *xiv.*, 132 *n.*  
 ——— Maria, 132 *n.*  
 Stuart, Lady Arabella, 145, 155  
 ——— Ludovic, Duke of Lennox, 173  
 Stutfeild, Mr., 166  
 Sudbury, *co.* Suffolk, *xv.*  
 Sussex, Earls, etc., of, *v.* Ratcliffe  
 Sutton, —, 103  
 Swift, Sir Edward, of Doncaster, 128  
 ——— Sir Robert, of Doncaster, 128  
 Sydney, Sir Robert, Ambassador to  
 France, 75; *cr.* Viscount Lisle, 154;  
 installed K.G., 182  
 Syliard, Eustace, *ix.*, 43  
 Talbot, Dr., 108  
 ——— Mr., Irish lawyer, prisoner in  
 the Tower, 177  
 ——— Lady Alatheia, 145, 148  
 ——— Gilbert, Earl of Shrewsbury, 77,  
 97, 132  
 ——— Lady Mary, married to Lord  
 Pembroke, 147, 148  
 Tamarisk cup, purchase of, 162, 165  
 Tanfield, Lawrence, Serjeant-at-law,  
 Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer,  
 126, 176  
 Taurus, capture of the town of, 142  
 Taverner, Richard, 142  
 Teynham, Baron, *v.* Roper, Sir John  
 Thakster, *al.* Thaxter, John, late Rector  
 of Bridgeham, 112, 113, 114  
 Theobalds, *co.* Herts., 70, 75, 78, 85,  
 128, 141  
 Thetford, *co.* Norfolk, *xiv.*, 32, 43,  
 69, 79, 80, 127, 140, 170  
 Thexton, Sir Richard, of *co.* York, 128  
 Thimblethorpe, Sir Edmund, of Nor-  
 folk, 136  
 Throgmorton, Lady, 20  
 Thumery, Jean de, Sieur de Boissize,  
 French Ambassador, 122  
 Thynne, Sir Thomas, 181  
 Tiltings, 13, 25, 96, 103, 105, 173  
 Toledo, Pedro de, Conde de Fuentes  
*xii.*, 67  
 Tolleshunt Darcy, *co.* Essex, *ix.*, 50  
 Tolson, *v.* Tolleshunt, Darcy  
 Tostocke, *co.* Suffolk, 111  
 Tower, The, *v.* London  
 Townshend, Sir John, 104, 105, 107,  
 109, 137  
 ——— Sir Robert, 157  
 Treasurers, Lord, *v.* Cecil, Robert, Earl  
 of Salisbury; Cecil, William, Lord  
 Burghley; Sackville, Thomas, Earl of  
 Dorset  
 Triumph, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships, H.M.  
 Tuchet, George, Baron Audley, 31  
 Turkey, death of Mahomet III., Sultan,  
 142

- Turner, —, 93  
 ——— Anne, 179  
 Tyburn, *v.* London  
 Tylney, Mrs., 23, 26  
 ——— Philip, Sheriff of Suffolk 23, 43  
 Tyrone, Earl of, *v.* O'Neill, Hugh  
 Tyrrell, Mrs., 40, 101  
 Tyrrhwit, Mr., 132  
 ——— Sir Philip, 128  
 ——— Robert, of Kettleby, 89
- Unger, Luke, 87  
 Ushant, 57
- Vahounde, Dr., *v.* Vaughan, Richard  
 Valois, Charles, Duc d'Auvergne, 123  
 Valyant, a servant, 71, 115, 116, 124  
 Vaughan, Richard, Bishop of London, 150  
 Vauisor, Anne, 112  
 Venice, Ambassador from, 135  
 Vere, Anne, wife of Edward, Earl of Oxford, 38  
 ——— Sir Francis, 80, 97, 163  
 ——— Lady Susan, 150  
 Vice-Chamberlains of the Household, *v.* Hatton, Sir Christopher; Stanhope, Sir John  
 Victory, H.M. Ship, *v.* Ships, H.M.  
 Villiers, Sir George, Earl of Buckingham, 179, installed K.G., 182  
 Virginia, 2,000 men going to, 173
- Waad, *al.* Wade, Sir William, Clerk of the Council, etc., 130, 131, 141  
 Wade, Mr., 48, 104, 105, 120  
 Wade, Sir William, *v.* Waad  
 Waldegrave, Jemina, Lady, 97  
 ——— Sir William, 14, 23, 105, 156  
 Walden, Lady, *v.* Howard, Elizabeth  
 ——— Lord, *v.* Howard, Theophilus  
 Wales, 99  
 Walgrave, Wallgrave, *v.* Waldegrave
- Wallop, Sir Henry, 181  
 Walsingham, Sir Frances, Secretary to the Queen, 25  
 ——— Lady, 129  
 Waltham, Baron, *v.* Denny, Sir Edward  
 Wanstead, co. Essex, 10, 35  
 Warburton, Sir Richard, of Cheshire, 129  
 Ware, co. Essex, 11, 74  
 Warner, a servant, 84  
 ——— Mr., 113  
 ——— Sir Henry, 139, 140  
 Warren, Mr., 85  
 ——— Richard, Sheriff of Essex, 68  
 Warwick, Countess of, *v.* Dudley, Anne  
 Watson, priest, 136  
 Wattingham Castle in Holland, 126  
 Webb, Thomas, 84  
 Webbe, —, 147  
 Wentworth, Mrs., 35  
 West, Sir Thomas, 31  
 Weybread, co. Suffolk, 84  
 Wharton, Philip, Baron Wharton, 46, 131  
 Whitakers, Mr., servant to Lord Somerset, 179  
 Whitehall, *v.* London  
 Whitgift, John, Archbishop of Canterbury, 48, 65, 70  
 Whydden, Joyles, slain in Flanders, 161  
 Wight, Isle of, 131  
 Wilbraham, Sir Roger, Master of Requests, 130  
 Wilford, Sir Thomas, 121  
 Williams, Richard, 90  
 ——— Sir Roger, 77  
 ——— Sir William, 90  
 Willoughby d'Eresby, Barons, etc., *v.* Bertie  
 Wimbledon, co. Surrey, 70, 85  
 Windom, Herry, 96, 108, 109  
 Windsor, Anne, wife of Henry, Lord Windsor, 40  
 ——— Henry, Lord Windsor, 14  
 Winkfield, Sir Edward, 31  
 Winter, Sir William, 47

- Withitpoll, —, 88  
 Wittenberg, Duke of, 135  
 Wolley, Dr. John, 75  
 Woodhouse, Philip, 78  
 ——— Sir William, 81, 89, 95, 112,  
     131, 137, 138  
 Woolmer, Luke, cousin of P. Gawdy, 6,  
     7, 11, 12, 16, 18, 19, 24, 26, 33, 45,  
     52, 93  
 Worcester, Bishop of, *v.* Fletcher,  
     Richard  
 ——— Earl, etc., of, *v.* Somerset  
 Worliche, —, Justice of Peace, 157  
 Wotton, Anne, viii., ix.  
 ——— Sir Edward, 89, 91  
 ——— John, viii.  
 ——— Sir John, 89  
 ——— Philippa, wife of Sir E. Bacon,  
     67 *n.*  
 Wright, Mrs., 54, 55
- Wriothesley, Henry, Lord Southampton,  
     70, 101, 129, 131  
 Wroth, James, son of Sir Robert and  
     Lady Mary Wroth, death of (1616),  
     182  
 ——— Lady Mary, widow of Sir  
     Robert Wroth, 182  
 Wyatt, George, of the Inner Temple, 14
- Yarmouth, Great, 154  
 Yelverton, Mr., 168  
 ——— Sir Henry, Attorney-General,  
     179  
 York, Duke of, *v.* Charles, Prince  
 Yorke, Sir Edmund, 90
- Zinzan, *v.* Alexander  
 Zouche, Edward, Baron Zouche, 131









